

## CHAPTER TWENTY-SIX

### EDMUND PERSHALL

#### Second in Ancestry

*Section 1, Edmund Pershall—Section 2, Maria Bathurst—Section 3, Thomas Pershall—Section 4, Robert Peshall—Section 5, James Pershall—Section 6, Edmund Peshall, the younger.*

Note.—If the reader desires to be fully informed concerning our ancestor, who emigrated from England to America, and who there became the founder of the family of Pearsall, he will read every word of the genealogical-historical account given in this chapter, not confining him-

self to section 1, which relates to our ancestor of this generation, but carefully studying the account herein presented of his brothers and their descendants, who paralleled the American family for several generations, and who were their business associates as well as cousins.

#### SECTION 1.

2. EDMUND PERSHALL, son of Richard Pershall, Chapter 25, Section 1, was born circa 1531; died April 1629; married Maria Bathurst, daughter of Lancelot Bathurst, alderman of London; who died September 27, 1594, aged 65 years; and his wife Judith Randolph, daughter of Bernard Randolph of London, 1583. (Chapter 26, Section 2.) When Edmund Pershall entered into business, in London, in the year 1552 he changed his name to the spelling Pearsall and all his children were born Pearsall. Later he made an effort to use the spelling Peshall. Children:— [Visitations of Staffordshire and Kent.]

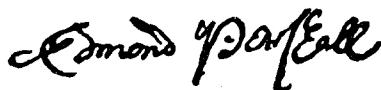
1. \*1 THOMAS PEARSALL, Chapter 27, Section 1.

2. Robert Pearseall, Chapter 28, Section 1.

3. Edmund Pearseall als Peshall, Chapter ~~27, Section 3~~ *26, Section 6*

4. Mary Pearsall.

Inquisition. 10 August, 7 James I. (1609) on the Estate of Thomas Pershall, Esq. of Eccleshall in County Stafford recites that Edmund Pershall was his oldest brother. Edmund is also named in the will of his brother Robert Peshall of Blorepipe, dated October 7, 1622. He is also named as coexecutor with his brother Robert in their brother Humphrey's will dated May 14, 1585; see Chapter 25, Section 1. [Inquisitions Post Mortem, series II, 319:186.]



In the state papers, containing the patents granted by the King of England and recorded in Record Book Sign. Man., Vol. v., Nos. 3 and 4, appears the signature of Edmond Pershall.

Edmond Pearsall is the genearch of all the members of the family who came to America in the seventeenth century and they all without exception spelled the family name as Pearsall when they reached the New World, although since then the descendants of these first emigrants have made many departures from the common and original way their several ancestors spelled the family name.

It will be well to call the reader's attention again to the fact that the branches of the family of Peshall located at Horsley and Ranton, in Staffordshire, had changed the manner of spelling the surname at the time of the Battle of Bosworth

Field. The Ranton Family had adhered to the old phoneticism, whereas the Horsley family had sounded their name so that it was the equivalent of Piersall, spelling the same as Pershall. When great wealth came to the Horsley branch by reason of successful ventures in business, particularly in the tobacco trade of Virginia, then they tried to go back to the old spelling Peshall. This change, or rather attempted change, can be traced to the advice of Sampson Erdeswicke, the great genealogist and historian who disclosed this spelling of the family name, in searching out the ancestry of the family for the heraldic Visitations which began about this time, and also in connection with his historical writings. But before this, Edmond Pershall of Horsley, Staffordshire, had become Edmond Pearsall, merchant of the Staple of London. Later, but practically at the same time, this same style of spelling their family name was adopted by certain of the members of the Ranton branch who resided at Hallen, als Hales Owen, in Salop, now Worcestershire, and those of the same branch who resided in and near Kidderminster, in Worcestershire, and in another stem of the Ranton branch who resided in Upper Toynton, in Lincolnshire. There were also stems of the Ranton branch residing at Hopwood and at Edgbaston who changed the spelling of their family name to Pearsall. But while these adopted the new phoneticism, they nevertheless adhered to the old sound values so that the change with them was merely in sight and not in hearing. Edmond Pearsall, as we have already stated, also only changed his spelling but not the sound value of the name, so that there were now several families in England using this new spelling but yet having different sound values for their surname. The Ranton families sounded the first element in their surname the same as the fruit pear-sall, whereas Edmond Pearsall gave the first element the equivalent sound value of pear as in appear or pier-sall. In this particular the two families were evidencing the same distinction between their family names as they had severally adopted at the time of the Battle of Bosworth Field. The reason why Edmond Pershall became Edmond Pearsall when he became a merchant of the Staple of London is quite evident to the student of philology. For when he removed from the section of West England with its burr sounds of the cockney English, together with its inability to sound the letter 'h,' to the soft English of the region of Kent and London, he must have been surprised at the interpretation of sound values placed upon the old Staffordshire spelling of his family name.

The Visitations of Kent uniformly spell his name as Pershall. In the *Genesis of the United States*, by Alexander Brown (vol. 2, page 262), he says that the records disclose that the clerks of records spelled the name Pashall, Pascell, Peashall, Piershall, Parshall and Peshall, thus indicating the difficulty the clerks in the land of soft English had in interpreting the sounds making the name of a cockney Englishman. In the book of the grocers company of London his name is sometimes written Piersall. In the work called the *Sign Manual of England* his signature appears as Edmund Pershall and in *Foster's Inn of Court Register* (vol. 2, page 6) his son is called Edmond, Edward, or Edmund Pearsall.

The story about the way Edmond spelled his surname is very interesting. He was born Pershall, which style he used until he removed from Horsley in Staffordshire to London, about 1552, when he changed to Edmond Pearsall.

This style he continued to use until some time after he joined the Grocers Guild, and thereafter he continued to use this style until circa 1609 when he changed to Peshall along with his brother Robert, who at that time changed from Pershall to Peshall. For the balance of his lifetime Edmond seems to have had no uniform way of spelling his surname, the records after 1612 showing instances of each of these several styles of spelling the surname. This want of uniformity was no doubt brought about by the varied experiences which he had at this time. It will be noticed that at the time of his marriage, and of the birth of his children, he called himself Pearsall. This is further substantiated by the Complaint in the English Court of Chancery filed by Cuthbert Booth, in 1612, wherein he gives emphasis to the spelling of Pearsall as being signed in this manner by Edmond for the period of about thirty years prior to the filing of this paper. The reader will find a copy of part of this paper appended hereto so that he may examine the same for his own information. This Cuthbert Booth had the most intimate dealings with Edmond Perseall and was also related to the branch of the family at Toynton, in Lincolnshire, who following after the lead of Edmond Perseall called themselves Pearsall. There was consequently no one who knew better the way that Edmond Perseall indicated his family name. The solicitor who prepared this bill in equity had before him at the time a series of bonds covering the period stated and all made and signed by Edmond Pearsall. All of the sons of Edmond retained the Pearsall way of spelling their surname except Edmond Junior, who changed after he left college to the form of Peshall. With such a remarkable variation of the way of indicating the surname it became necessary for the writer to adopt one of these forms for convenience' sake in writing of this generation and about Edmond; hence it was deemed advisable to follow the style used by Edmond after he came to London and to uniformly speak of him as Edmond Pearsall; but the reader will kindly bear in mind the changes which occurred chronologically as above set out and there will be no difficulty for him to appreciate the life story of Edmond Pershall—Pearsall—Peshall as hereinafter set out.

It is a common error to believe that men do not change the way of spelling their family name, but that son follows father in unbroken style for generation after generation from the time when the family first came into existence as representing a separate group in the community. In these studies which have brought the reader down through our family history from the beginning of the same in the Scandinavian Peninsula, thence to Normandy and to Italy, thence to England, and then on down to this Edmond Pearsall, we have had to record several marked changes in the family name and a continued series of variations from generation to generation in the main line, as well as in the several branches of the stem of descent from the original ancestor. It will be therefore all the more interesting at this time to look ahead and note that although all the descendants of Edmond Pearsall who came to America began here by calling themselves Pearsall, yet by the time of the first census of the United States in 1790, the descendants then living of Edmond Pearsall had increased to ninety-four separate families, comprising four hundred and seventy-eight individuals, and these spelled their family name as:—Pearsall, Parcel, Parcell, Parsells, Parsels, Par-





sill, Pearcall, Pearceall, Pearsel, Pearsell, Persall, Persel, Persell, Pershall, Parshall, Perzel, Piercall, Pierceall, Piersall, Peirsall, Purcall, Purcel, Purcell, Purkell, Pursel, Pursell, Pussal. [Century of Population Growth, page 256.]

What induced all the variations will never be known. The strange and interesting part of it is that independent investigation by different families who thought their way of spelling the only true one brought them to Edmond Pearsall as their common ancestor.

When Edmond Pearsall began to visit certain localities in England and have business dealings with certain members of the family residing in these localities, stopping in their homes for weeks at a time, it was only natural that these little groups of the family should adopt his way of spelling the surname, and that this style should come to be peculiarly a locality variation of the old family name. Hence this spelling may also be defined as a locality name, confined in England primarily to the City of London, where Edmond Pearsall and his sons resided, and to be found among the members of the family in the counties of Salop, Stafford, Worcester and Warwick, who resided on, or near to, the road leading from Hales Owen to Kidderminster and thence to Birmingham, and to the little group at Upper Toynton in Lincolnshire. It is baffling to the uninformed to step out of these very circumscribed areas where the name Pearsall prevails, or did prevail, and find near cousins with the old spellings of the family name.

Edmund Pearsall was, as has been stated, born circa 1531, and died in 1629, so that he had reached the age of one hundred years at the time of his decease, for it is quite certain that the actual date of his birth will be found to have preceded the above year of 1531. In 1552 he came to London where he entered into business as a merchant of the staple and, except for one year, he continued in mercantile business until the time of his death. So that irrespective of the remarkable incidents of his life which we shall briefly relate, and most of which incidents were part of the broadest history of his time, he had the very unusual distinction of being a merchant, and most of the time a leading merchant, in the City of London, during the last years of the reign of Queen Mary; during all of the reign of Queen Elizabeth; during all of the reign of King James I., and during the early years of the reign of King Charles I. As a fact the most important period of his business career as a successful merchant happened after Edmund Pearsall was nearly eighty years of age.

In following the general plan of arrangement in this history of grouping all the real estate data, the reader's attention should nevertheless be called to the fact that the title to the bulk of the landed possessions of Edmond Pearsall was vested in his brother Robert Peshall of Bloor Pipe in Staffordshire. The reader's attention is therefore directed to the fourth section of Chapter 26, where this subject of the landed property belonging to Edmond Pearsall is also discussed, and presented at length, in connection with the history of Robert Peshall of Bloor Pipe.

Edmond Pearsall having become possessed of large amounts of surplus funds, there was a desire evidenced by Robert Pershall to obtain the use of these moneys wherewith to acquire landed possessions which he hoped to secure to his own use and behoof. Among the rest which he attempted to acquire in this manner was that of the Priory of Elvescroft, which was part of said Robert Pershall's estate

at the time of his death, but which really belonged to Edmond Pearsall, and which estate figured in the litigation subsequent to Robert's death between his daughter and heir, Elizabeth, the wife of Sir Humphrey Styles, and Edmond Pearsall, citizen and grocer of London. The first knowledge that Edmond Pearsall had that his brother Robert claimed this valuable property as his own, was when he found, from reading Robert's will, that the latter had in his lifetime created an estate tail in this landed estate for himself and his heirs.

The story as to the acquisition of this property is well told in the Chancery proceedings [James I., Bundle 15, No. 64], and the reader's attention is especially directed to this interesting incident, not only because it reveals the method of ancient negotiations and agreements for the sale of lands in England, but primarily because this transaction entered largely into the subsequent unfortunate disagreement between these two brothers. The brothers had negotiations with the previous owner, Bonnet Wilson, then of Ulvescroft als Wolvescroft in the County of Leicester. The Complaint is dated November 22, 1608, and is by Robert Peshall of Horsley, County Stafford, and Edmond Pearsall, Citizen and Grocer of London, and recites that Whereas:—Bonnet Wylson and Ambrose Wylson Gent., were lawfully seized of the Capital Messuage (Manor House) Priory House and Grite (Domicil held with the idea of notion or service) of the late dissolved Priory of Elvescroft, als Wolvescroft, in the County of Leicester and all and singular the house, edifices, buildings and barns, stables, orchards, gardens and barksides with the appurtenances to the said capital messuage and grite of the said priory belonging and of and in divers and sundry lands, tenements and hereditaments lying and being in the towns, villages, parishes, hamlets and fields of Elvescroft, als Wolvescroft, at Wolvescroft, Rathy, Newton and Marrowliffe in the said county of Leicester. Called by the several names of Cuvclose, Bastards lease, Willsons Meade als Nowells, Nowells Spring, Stainways Leyes, Stainways Spring, Johns Lease, Johns Lease Spring, Ryall Carr, Upper Black Cliff, Nether Black Cliff, Coduit Close als Conduit lease. Ffawknors Close, New Close, Redd Lanes, Cooke Carr. (A carr is a copse or marsh overgrown with brushwood, usually alder.) Ffoxholes als Collins Close, Great Scratt Close, Little Scratt Close, More Fields, Bishops Field als Butchers Field, Paymans Ley als Packmans Ley, Copt Eake als Coppedale Close, Hammers Cliff, Stainwell Hill, Moslyes Plain, Bishops Hill, Crow Hill, Black Cliff Hill, Bamden Castle, Ghorleys Close, Parcell and Playmans Hey and Calbournes Close, Parcelle and Paymans Hey, or by what other name or names soever the same or any of them are called or known. And of and in divers other messuages, Cottages, Lands, Tenements and hereditaments with the appurtenances situate and being in the towns, parishes and fields of Elvescroft als Wolvescroft, Ratby Newton and Marcliffe aforesaid or in any of them to the said priory or lordship belonging now or late in the tenure or occupation of Nicholas Cock, Robert Bennet, Bennet Pykvard Bennet Sranng and John Crump or any of them or their assigns. And of and in which the said Bennet Wylson during his lifetime and after his death the said Ambrose Wylson was seized in his demesne as of fee tail to him and his heirs male of his body begotten with divers remainders over. The said Bennet Wylson and Ambrose Wylson being so thereof seized entered into con-

versation (that is, they began to negotiate) with Edmond Peshall in his own behalf and that of his brother Robert Peshall for an absolute assurance of the said premises to the said Edmond Peshall and Robert Peshall their heirs and assigns in fee simple. The consideration to be £3000 to be paid at certain times beginning in 1608. It was accordingly so agreed and a paper book made up (a memorandum fixing the terms of the sale from which the Scriveners would make the deeds and other papers carrying out the sale). There was £500 paid at this time, which the said Robert and Edmond claimed was on account of the purchase price. The final consummation of the sale hung along for some time because Robert Peshall did not have the money to pay for the property and wanted the sellers to take his plain statutes Staple or bond for the purchase price, not even secured like a purchase money mortgage against the said Priory. This the sellers refused to take and Edmond Pearsall refused to enter into any such bond, claiming that it would hurt his business standing to be involved for the payment of so large a sum of money outside of his regular business dealings. The Bill in Equity was filed by the said Robert Peshall and Edmond Pearsall for the purpose of making the Wilsons specifically perform the contract of sale. The answer of the Wilsons to this complaint is very illuminating as to the family history and business relations of the brothers, Robert Peshall and Edmond Pearsall.

The Wilsons said that they did have such a conversation with Edmond Pearsall in July of this same year (1608) for the purchase of the said messuages, lands, tenements and hereditaments, which finally reached the stage of an agreement being entered into between the said Robert Peshall of Eccleshall of the one part and Bonnet Wylson Esq. and his nephew, Ambrose Wilson of Ulvescroft, County Leicester, of the other part and this was signed July 9, 1608. The transfer was to be made by November first following and to be made to Robert Peshall, his heirs and assigns, and to such other persons as he shall nominate and appoint and their heirs, clear of all incumbrances, and the spring woods instead of being filled and removed were in the meanwhile to be preserved. For which conveyance the said Robert Peshall was to pay the sum of £3400 in certain instalments. At the same time it was also agreed between the Wilsons and Robert Peshall that they should all of them, about the beginning of the then present November, repair to London and that there the counsel, learned in the law of both parties, should frame and agree upon some conveyance thereof to be made according to the said agreement, and thereupon the Wilsons should receive the sum of £1000, and that Robert Peshall should then give to the Wilsons good security for the payment of the residue of the purchase money. About one week before the said first of November, Bonnet Wylson came to London where he met Ambrose Wilson and they were ready for their part to perform the said agreement. About a week after the appointed time Robert Peshall resorted to London where, meeting with the Wilsons, he did absolutely affirm to them that he was not able to perform the said payment unless his brother Edmond Pearsall should join with him in the purchase of the same and yet did also pretend, and so avoid the said contract, that the said messuage and other lands, tenements and hereditaments were held of the King's Majesty by knight's service in capite so that he, Edmond Pearsall, would not therewith meddle. This was a subterfuge to get out of the



bargain, which for want of necessary funds he was unable to complete. Robert Peshall thereupon offered to lend the Wilsons the sum of £500 which was accepted by them and which was accomplished by getting the money from Edmond Pearsall and giving him a statute staple with bond, and dated November 7, 1608, promising to repay the same on May fourteenth of the ensuing year. Robert Peshall becoming surety on the loan, a bond was made to him securing him against any loss that might happen by reason of his endorsement of the bond. By agreement the said bond was placed in the hands of one Bostwick a scrivener to hold until there should be a defeasance by their default in paying the loan as aforesaid. But the money was not paid to them, so after that the said Bonnet Wilson, having a good opinion of and confidence in Edmond Pearsall, did leave in his hands the said statute staple with intent that it should be of no force unless it should be defeasenced as aforesaid after the money had been received. It was not until November 13, 1608, that the money was paid by Edmond Pearsall, of which £20 was received by Ambrose Wilson.

It was after this that Edmond Pearsall began to confer with the Wilsons concerning the purchase of the said premises from them. Edmond Pearsall told them that he did not know whether or not the said Robert Peshall would be partner with him in the transaction; but this made no difference so long as the Wilsons would assure unto the said Edmond Pearsall, his heirs, the necessary lands, tenements and hereditaments he did not esteem it so, he said, but that these negotiations were to be understood and taken as being entirely on his own account, so that in this manner he, Edmond Pearsall, would himself be the sole purchaser thereof, whether or not the said Robert Peshall would attempt to revive the old bargaining, and he desired that the consideration be arranged so that it would be made in certain instalments during the years 1609 and 1610. The Wilsons said that throughout all these negotiations they did not know that Robert Peshall was to have any part of it except at the pleasure of the said Edmond Pearsall. Yet nevertheless, there was no particular absolute assurance concluded and agreed between them and him unless the said Edmond Pearsall was to give them such security for the payment of the said consideration as they should like, as to which the Wilsons and the said Edmond Pearsall did also differ and never agreed. There was a paper book to be engrossed as an indenture of bargain and sale of the said premises but the same was not in all things by the Wilsons' counsel allowed. It appears that there were certain incumbrances in the nature of Statute staples and there was a dispute as to how these should be satisfied. There was also a want of agreement as to the manner of securing the unpaid purchase money, all of which were discussed at several conferences but which resulted in pure conversations and were of no effect. Afterwards Edmond Pearsall renewed the conversations and expressed himself satisfied with the several times for payment and the amount of the secured debts against the property, but failed to make satisfactory arrangements with the sellers for their security so that the consideration money would be paid. Bennet Wilson finally made up his mind to sell to somebody else, and this coming to the ears of Edmond Pearsall and his brother Robert Peshall this equity proceeding was for the purpose of preventing such a sale being effected. The Wilsons say that they are willing to

carry out the agreement of sale but must have adequate security for the payment of the unpaid purchase money. But Edmond Pearsall declines to enter into a Statute staple because it will be a discredit to his being a merchant, while to take the property subject to the debts of the Wilsons, the said Edmond Pearsall also refused, so that the Wilsons deem themselves free to sell to whom they please. In this suit Robert and Edmond Pearsall were represented as their counsel by Richard Daston whom Robert Peshall in his will calls his friend and kinsman. A compromise was effected by which Edmond Pearsall bought the property but the title was taken in the name of Robert Peshall as Edmond Pearsall did not want it to appear that he had tied so much of his available capital in unproductive land, not but that this property was worth all that he was paying for it, and more, and that it was all right so far as farm lands were concerned, but it was not such liquid assets as were required by a merchant doing the large business that Edmond was transacting in all parts of England and to the uttermost parts of the world. It represented an investment according to present day values aggregating fully two hundred and fifty thousand dollars. It would be a financially very strong mercantile concern, even today, that could withdraw so large a sum from its regular business capital and tie it up in real estate that was only valuable for residence purposes and farming. The record discloses quite clearly that Robert Peshall was of himself, and without the help of his brother Edmond, utterly and entirely unable to buy this property, whereas the same record shows that it was bought by Edmond Pearsall for his own account and irrespective of his brother Robert. It was unfortunate that Edmond thought it necessary to conceal his ownership by placing the title in his brother as this was taken advantage of subsequently and resulted greatly to the damage of Edmond Pearsall.

The reader's attention is also directed to the large amount of money involved in this real estate deal as it shows how financially able Edmond Pearsall was, with or without the assistance of his friends and business associates, to handle the largest transactions either financial or mercantile.

The location of Edmond Pearsall's home in County Kent is shown by the record of the Chancery proceedings to quiet his title thereto wherein it was asserted by Edmond Pershall Citizen and Grocer of London, in 1608, that one Perrywall Hassell owned a messuage and tenement at Masons Hill in the Parish of Bromley, in County Kent, and of and divers other and sundry lands, tenements and hereditaments lying and being in the said Parish of Bromley called by the several names of The Close near the House, New Crofft, Stony Field, Middle Field, Old Middle Field, Chediston, Chedington Meade, Cheddington Grove and Loam Pitt Field, which he held in his demesne as of fee and being so thereof seized hath before this time by fine and other good conveyances and assurances in the law for divers sums of money to him paid by Edmond Perseall conveyed and assured the same to the said Edmond Peshall and his heirs in fee. Since which time the said Perrywall Hassell has given it out publicly that he had previously conveyed the same premises to some one else for a good consideration which statement under the laws relating to the conveyance of real estate, at that time in force, created such a doubt upon the title of the said Edmond as demanded relief in a court of Equity. Hence the prayer of the complaint of said

Edmond Pearsall that the said Perrywall Hassell should declare what former secret estate if any he hath made to any other person or persons and to whom and for what consideration and whether the said conveyance be recoverable at the will and pleasure of the said Perrywall Hassell. The said Perrywall Hassell on the Third day of December 1608, made answer that some two years last past he was lawfully seized of the premise and the said lands in the Parish of Bromley conveyed by the deed and fine set forth in the Bill of Complaint, but he denied having made the statements as is therein set forth concerning other conveyances as having been made for the said lands and tenements. That there was as a fact no estates or incumbrances against said land made by the said Perrywall Hassell except the deed and fine made to Edmond Peshall and one mortgage of the premises to William Beddle of Wickham in the County of Kent which has been satisfied. (This is an interesting association of the names of Pearsall and Bedell in view of their subsequent association in Hempstead, Long Island.) Perrywall Hassell also stated that the premises were subject to a lease to one Mr. Smith that was to run for eleven years and a lease for twenty-one years to one Bybye, both of which leases were known to said Edmond Peshall and accepted by him at the time he obtained title to said premises by said deed and fine. [Chancery Proceedings, James I., Bundle 9, No. 65.]

Edmond Pearsall was also at this time (1616) the owner of a large tract of wood land in the County of Kent, the interesting history of which is told in certain chancery proceedings which he prosecuted to prevent waste of the timber. In his Bill of Complaint Edmond Pershall, Citizen and Grocer of London, sets out that he was seized in his demesne as of fee of certain woods or wood ground commonly called The Frythe containing one hundred and fifty acres and situate in the County of Kent. That he had purchased the same from the heirs of one Anthony Calthorp. That subsequently one William Higges did claim to have an estate for twenty years, or so much thereof as had not expired, and that the same did end at Michaelmas last past being in the year 1613. Edmond Pershall did begin a suit at law against the said William Higges which was referred by the parties plaintiff and defendant to their consul learned in the law, namely Edmond Randolph for Edmond Pershall, and Egermonde Thynn representing William Higges. (The said Edmond Randolph was the cousin of the wife of Edmond Pershall.) It appeared that the said William Higges had in the mean time set up a further and other leasehold in said land running for five years beginning immediately after conclusion of the first leasehold estate. At the arbitration William Higges abandoned his claim for the new term of five years and Edmond Pershall agreed to release all damages and interest in said land to William Higges for the balance of said term of twenty years and paid him, the said William Higges, the sum of £30 English money to the end that the said William Higges should surrender all his estate and interest to said Edmond Pershall after the Feast of St. Michael then next and that Edmond Pershall should covenant and agree that it should be lawful for William Higges to have and use the said wood three months after the expiration of the said lease for the purpose of hauling and carrying away his said wood after it was felled. It was further agreed that William Higges should, after the said wood had been felled, carefully keep the

said woodland and cause the same to be kept from the destruction and byting of cattle. Under this agreement William Higges peaceably felled and he or his successors carried away the wood belonging to him.

The wood was felled in the winter which was a seasonable time to fell the same and shortly after this William Higges was dead, after which Thomas Higges, son of William Higges, John Bridges and John Dunster claimed that they had an interest therein as representing William Higges. They moreover claimed that the said agreement gave them possession until Michaelmas 1614, and although the trees growing on the land were one part of one years growth and the rest of two years growth yet they threatened to spoil and cut down all said coppes, woods and fourteen or fifteen thousand young standells or stoarers of oak, elm and ash which had been left standing at a former felling and which were under twenty years growth. A standrel is a tree reserved for growth as timber to seed the forest so as to continue the growth. Twelve of which for each acre were to be left, by act of Parliament, at the felling of a woods. When the new growth became established then these standels became storers, that is to say, trees which had been stored or reserved, and these could be cut and removed in such a way as not to injure the growing timber. It was an irreparable misfortune to have the seed trees removed from a forest. It also appears that the said parties now claimed the other term of five years commencing at the end of the said term of twenty years and which the said William Higges had surrendered in the compromise settlement above referred to. The matter was adjudged in favor of the title held by Edmond Pearsall. [Chancery Proceedings, James I., Bundle 6, No. 9.]

The record discloses the following interesting pedigree:—

Anthony Calthorpe=Fannie		
Will dated April 20, 1593, executors, wife Fannie Calthorp and eldest son Clement Calthorp. decedent died July 19, 1594.		
Clement Calthorp who was appointed trustee 1597, along with Timothy Lowe and John Scott the elder and Timothy Lowe and John Scott the younger. Whittingham Wood, William Hewlett, Robert Hewlett and William Richbell of Bromley, Kent, (All of whom have family names which later appear in Hempstead, Long Island, New York.)		N. N. a daughter who married William Higges. He died in 1612. His executors John Bridges and John Dunster.
1. Sampson Calthorp eldest son made deed of compromise July 14, 1602, and Deed Poll of release Aug. 5, 1603.	2. Anthony Calthorp 3. Clement Calthorp 4. Mary Calthorp 5. Judith Calthorp 6. Elizabeth Calthorp	Thomas Higges and other children and grandchildren.
Barbara Fannie	Elizabeth	

Edmond Pearsall at the time of his retirement from business in 1615 was also possessed of a certain messuage with the appurtenances consisting of certain arable lands and pasture lands together with meadow and wood land located in Bromley, Kent. [Chancery Proceedings, James I., Bundle 4, No. 70.] Which in the fortieth year of the reign of Queen Elizabeth (1598) he obtained in fee simple by a deed of bargain and sale from John Bird the elder, John Bird the younger, Thomas Best the younger. The grant was to Edmond Peshall and to Robert Peshall his son and heir apparent and their heirs forever and the same was

executed by livery of seisen. And subsequently in the fourteenth year of the reign of James I. the said John Bird the elder, Thomas Bird and Denist his wife, John Bird the younger and Susan his wife, and the said Thomas Best, in the term of St. Michael did levy one fine in due form of law of the premises unto the said Edmond Pearsall and the said Robert Pearsall and to the heirs of this defendant as by the said fine being of record may appear. The consideration was four hundred and fifty pounds which was duly paid and acknowledged. This would be about twenty thousand dollars in present day money. Afterwards suit was commenced in 1622 by Arthur Best or Beast, claiming that he was heir of Robert Best and had title under an estate tail male to which he succeeded as heir male of Robert Best who was the heir male of Thomas Best the younger. The interesting part of this record is that it shows that in 1622 Edmond Pearsall still retained his fortune and was the owner of real estate. This was the same year that Robert Peshall made his will setting out that Edmund Pearsall was indebted to him and presumably unable to liquidate the same. The answer of Edmond Pearsall sets out his chain of title to the said lands and incidentally he names Hugh Best as being the oldest in the chain after whose death the title came to Thomas Best the elder who on January 1, 1585, conveyed the same to William Richbell the younger of Bromley. That on the following fourth day of January, Thomas Best the younger, released and quitclaimed all his right, title and interest in the said premises to the said William Richbell, his heirs and assigns forever. After this there was an indenture tripartite made between Thomas Best the elder, Thomas Best the younger, and John Bird the younger, of the first part, William Richbell the younger of the second part, and John Greene and Nicholas Eyles Yeomen of the third part. The purpose of this deed being that the parties should appear to an action to be brought before the justices of the Common Pleas at Westminster, in the County of Middlesex, on or before the Feast of St. John the Baptist then next and plead to a writ of entry sur disseizin etc. so as to suffer a common recovery. And there was also a fine to be levied with proclamation as provided by the statute in such cases made and provided of the messuage and appurtenances and hereditaments of all and every the said premises. The premises were adjudged to be the property of Edmund Pearsall, his heirs and assigns in fee simple. Still another property was that Edmond Pearsall purchased of Thomas Playleed, with all his interest and term of years of the lease of the lands, meadows and pastures granted by William late Lord Bishop of Coventry and Litchfield. Edmond requested Robert Peshall, his brother, to let one parcel of the said premises called Evendens, lying near the said Robert's dwelling, to the best profit he could for Edmond Pearsall, which he faithfully promised to do for him and Robert Peshall later informed Edmond Pearsall that he had let the same for £29, 9s. per annum. But as a fact he let one part for £30 per annum and kept closed another parcel of the same premises worth £43 per annum in his own hands and never paid Edmond Pearsall any rent for the same. And the said Robert Peshall took the same per annum to himself from the year 1594 to the year 1614. Receiving £30 per year for the other part only allowed Edmond Pearsall £29 9s. for the same.

Edmond Pearsall says that he desired Robert Peshall to lett the other parcell of the said premises called Raes, the New Field and the New Field Meadow for Edmond Pearsall's best profit, which Robert Peshall accordingly did for £39 per annum over and above the Bishop's rent and received the same rent from the year 1594 until the year 1622 to Edmond Pearsall's use and disposed of the same rents and severed a great part of the wood and underwood thereon growing and converted the same to his own use, which with the same use upon use as Robert Peshall demanded of Edmond Pearsall would amount to £8000 which was due to Edmond Pearsall at the time of Robert Peshall's death and is still due to Edmond Pearsall from his heir. [Chancery Proceedings, Charles I., Bundle 53, No. 48; Bundle 65, No. 37.]

In their answer to the equity suit brought against them by Edmond Pearsall, Sir Humphrey Styles and Elizabeth his wife, daughter and heir of Robert Peshall, say that the rent from this estate due Edmond Pearsall from Robert Peshall was included in the settlement made in 1614 between the said brothers, and this discharge covered the rent due up to 1618; which is of course a manifest error on their part.

When the Muster of 1539 was made by King Henry VIII., Edmond Pearsall was a boy old enough to remember the events in his home locality and later could tell of his own knowledge about incidents relating to the drilling of the troops on the village green and along the king's highway which ran in front of his father's home in Horsley in Staffordshire. He knew intimately the events which resulted from the dissolution of the Churches as great land-holders and had seen the influx of the new-comers who secured the church lands. He had also seen the turn over, in his locality, from farming to sheep grazing whereby the whole scheme of things was so completely changed that it would have been difficult to explain to a stranger how differently things were going on at this time as compared with what had been the custom of the community before these changes took place. Perhaps unconsciously Edmond Pearsall saw the commerce in the wool staple begin in which he was to be so important a factor. It is likely that it was only in his boyhood dreams that he saw himself leaving his old Staffordshire home, where his ancestors had lived for more than four centuries, to go to the great city of London where he would be a merchant traveling all over England buying at the markets and from the farmers all the products of the sheep industry, including the cloths made in the cottages as well as the broad cloths made by the mercers in the incorporated towns. Nor could it have been by any but the wildest flight of his fancy that Edmund Pearsall would have imagined that he would after while barter these products to the uttermost parts of the earth. He must have had such dreams, for nothing but the promptings of the spirit would have taken the Staffordshire man of but twenty-one years of age from his home surroundings and induced him to enter into trade in the city of London with its sharp, well-trained and experienced traders and merchants. Edmond Pearsall has left a statement in which he says that in 1552 he began business in the City of London as a Merchant of the Staple. At this time London was a City of ninety thousand inhabitants including both those within and without the walls of the old city. [Social England, by Traill and Mann, London, 1909, Vol. III, page 511.]

The merchants of the Staple were organized into a company to which one had to be elected to membership and be admitted after certain ceremonies and the payment of a substantial entrance fee. Then there were other companies who were affiliated with the staple but which were separate concerns. For example: The English foreign trade was mainly in the hands of certain great companies who enjoyed the legal monopoly of the commerce with various parts of the world. The earlier of these companies were not conducted on joint stock principles. They were associations of merchants each of whom might trade with his own capital and at his own risk, provided that he was a member of the company and conformed to its rules. But membership in these special trading companies was primarily dependent upon a merchant member being affiliated with the Guild of the Staple. These companies at the beginning were really nothing more than pools for the joint venturing in certain products to and from certain foreign ports. The earliest of these companies was called the Merchant Adventurers, but at the time of the entrance of Edmond Pearsall into the Merchant Staple of London there were several other important new companies organized. Among the rest, the Russia Company which was incorporated in 1555 and with which Edmond Pearsall became associated in many ventures. It obtained a monopoly of the trade with Russia and with any new countries that its agents might discover. [*Ibid.*, vol. III, page 504.] An act of Parliament of 1556 extended their monopoly to include most of the trade with Armenia, Media, Hyrcania, Persia and the Caspian Sea conditionally upon the trade being carried on only in English ships and the most of the crew being English. The company was very successful until about 1571. Then it began to decay partly through the fluctuating policy of the Czar, and partly through the company's greed. Dutch and German traders secured much of the Russian trade and private English merchants managed to elude the monopoly in various ways [*Ibid.*, page 440]. Edmond Pearsall continued to be a large trader to these foreign ports notwithstanding the general falling off of the English trade to these countries.

The staple merchandise of England, at the time Edmond Pearsall entered into business as a merchant of the same, was wool, wool fells or sheep skins with wool still on, leather, lead and tin. Butter, cheese and cloth. Goods intended for export had to be exposed for sale in the staple town as this enabled the officers of the king to collect the export taxes and also provided a place where the foreign merchants might resort to make their purchases, thereby greatly encouraging the foreign trade of England. The company of merchants had their own courts for settling disputes arising out of their trade; this was called the court of the Staple. It was in fact so much like our modern exchanges that the reader will have no difficulty in comprehending the association into which Edmond Pearsall had entered as a merchant. It was the work of these merchants to gather into the City of London the staple products of England and there expose them for sale to home and foreign buyers. Hence we find that Edmond Pearsall as a merchant of the staple was called upon to travel from place to place, buying from the farmers their butter and cheese and from the sheep-growers all the products of the sheep including wool, wool fells and hides. Specially did this occur with reference to the wool clip which, among other places, called him twice a year to

Staffordshire when he would stop with his brothers Thomas Pershall at Horsley, and Robert Pershall of Blore Pipe, and with his cousins in Eccleshall. Or it may be that he would be with the cousins at Hawn als Hales Owen, or at Kidderminster, or at Bromwich, or at Upper Toynton in Lincolnshire. It is recorded that he stayed with his brother Robert as many as twenty to forty days at a time dispatching his own business in the county while his men and horses would be scouring the country-side for the wool and other products handled by a merchant of the Staple. He would on these occasions also buy cloths from the independent weavers and from the incorporated towns which enjoyed the privileges of the Clothiers Guild. [Chancery Proceedings, Charles I., Bundle 65, No. 37; and Bundle 53, No. 48.]

Edmond Pearsall says that in later years some of his journeys, in fact many of them, to Staffordshire were made at the special request and command of his brother Robert who desired to know how his loan to Edmond was profiting so that he could draw against the same. But of this special incident in their associations we shall speak more definitely later on in this narrative.

The production of staple goods and products in England kept on increasing from year to year at such a rate as to make it necessary for the merchants to be constantly seeking new markets to which to export the ever-growing surplus. It was through this that in 1568 Edmund Pearsall first came into contact with the Bathurst and Randolph families with whom he was to have such close business dealings for the remainder of his life, and in the Bathurst family he and his son were to find their wives. This came about in 1568 when Thomas Randolph was sent by the merchants of the London Staple as an ambassador to the Czar of Russia to secure certain trading privileges from him, among which was the right to pass through Russia on the way to China to trade. [Social England, by Traill and Mann, vol. III, page 669.]

At home, in England, the woolen industry preserved its preeminence in the trade of the nation, but the direction of it was passing more and more into the hands of capitalists in the Company of Mercers, who gave out work and grew rich, partly by availing themselves of the opportunities for division of labor which manufacture on a large scale provided. For while the work of cloth-making was carried on almost entirely within the homes of the workmen and women, yet all were not equally skilled in each of its several branches, so it was profitable to employ the workers in that branch of the work in which they excelled. Thus the Carders became a powerful body and were able to secure legislative protection against the importation of foreign cards for wool. There was much rivalry also between clothiers in large towns, where the employers were protected by the monopoly of the Mercers and Clothiers Guild, and the independent operators in the smaller towns and country places; the latter enjoyed far more liberty and this seems often to have balanced the advantages of concentration and the greater facilities for manufacturing on a large scale in the cities and incorporated towns. [*Ibid.*, vol. III, page 501.] Parliament tried to confine the trade in cloths and other wool products to special towns from a belief that the quality of the goods could be better kept up owing to the greater ease of supervision, but the attempts to preserve the monopoly for a few towns were not very successful owing to the



efforts of Edmond Pearsall and other merchants of the Staple of London in encouraging these independent operators, both by lending them the necessary capital to carry on their business and by marketing their manufactured products. It was this trade which made Edmund Pearsall have so important a position in the estimation of the members of the Ranton branch of the Persall family who lived along the road running from Hales-owen, in Salop, through Kidderminster to Birmingham in Worcester, and which caused them all to become named Pearsall as the common spelling of the old family name. It was of course enormously profitable to Edmond Pearsall to be the banker and factor for these independent operators, but none the less, the fact that they so unanimously adopted his way of spelling the family name indicates most clearly and emphatically that these mutual dealings were entirely satisfactory to them. When we came to examine the records relating to this branch of the family we found that such of them as became connected with the incorporated town of Kidderminster, came there and immediately took their place as employing weavers with capital outranking others long established in this place, thus indicating that with the assistance of Edmond Pearsall these Pearsalls had become wealthy in making cloths in their old farm-houses, and when they removed to the incorporated town they brought with them a well established and going business.

Along with the other merchants of the Staple of London, Edmond Pearsall contributed to the exploration and settlement of every land where a foothold could be made for the extension of England's foreign and maritime commerce. Thus in 1577, the merchants of London sent Martin Frobisher to the coast of North America and he attempted a settlement on the shores of Hudsons Bay, where the colonists were prevented from making the settlement by the loss of some of the boats of the expedition. [*Ibid.*, vol. III, page 678.] The government also encouraged the merchants, of whom Edmond Pearsall was one, to establish the American fisheries. In 1577 there were 15 English vessels engaged in the New Foundland fisheries against 150 French, 100 Spanish and 50 Portuguese, but the English ships were the best and gave the law to all the rest and protected them against pirates. This was largely because the best market for the product was England and the majority of the vessels of every nation sailed into London where their cargoes were sold by Edmond Pearsall and the other merchants of the Staple of London. It was through this trade, which extended to the West India Islands, that Edmond Pearsall gained such a knowledge of the possibilities of American trade as warranted him subsequently to take so great a venture in the Tobacco trade in connection with the settlement of Virginia.

In the Mediterranean, the Turkey trade was steadily pressed by the English merchants, including Edmond Pearsall who always had a large share of this trade. In June 1580 this trade was fostered by the creation of the Turkey Company under the charter of Liberties to English merchants in Turkey. This was also a governmental scheme involving the protection of the trade to the far east. Hence the merchant vessels were armed for all the possible eventualities of war, and as the means for carrying on war usually begets a desire to try out any quarrel, it happened that the next year the English merchants were creating trouble in the Levant which the King called upon the Turkey company to redress.

[*Ibid.*, vol. III, page 658.] The business records of Edmond Pearsall disclose that he was a heavy and consistent trader to Turkey and other Mediterranean Ports. It was through the Turkey company that the London Merchants sent out several expeditions to open up other trade routes to the far east, specially to the East Indies. Edmond Pearsall supported these expeditions and opened trading relations with English factors, who at this time settled in Aleppo, Alexandria and other Mediterranean ports, as well as in New Babylon on the Tigris. The English merchants had to fight for their position in this trade and all their vessels were heavily armed. Later as the piratical warfare of the Spanish and English mariners deepened into the open and legitimate struggle of the two nations, the passage through the Straits of Gibraltar became more and more hazardous. [*Ibid.*, vol. III, page 658.] In 1586 there was a fight between five ships of London against eleven galleys and two frigates of Spain at Pantaleria, within the Straits of Gibraltar. [*Ibid.*, page 658.]

English historians have noticed that one of the remarkable incidents of the reign of Queen Elizabeth was that gentlemen of good birth and high character rushed into piracy, and that this was encouraged by the government, and that it was made religious by being directed against nations which were either barbarians or Catholics. But they have failed to notice that the money to support these expeditions came from the merchants of the Staple of London who, like Edmond Pearsall, were engaged in this foreign trade. [*Ibid.*, vol. III, page 337.] It was however found by these merchants that arming a merchant vessel would greatly reduce its freight-carrying capacity, and result in making the pay cargo so small as to seriously decrease the profits, even if the vessel was successful in its fight against the Spaniard and the Portuguese man-of-war, or overcame the barbarian vessels. It was developed by trial that expeditions sent out solely for the purpose of warfare, and to prey on the enemy, could be made doubly profitable through the booty thereby obtained, as well as the added security to the merchant vessels belonging to these same merchants. This piratical warfare was supported and maintained by the merchants of the Staple, and was looked upon by Edmond Pearsall and his associates as nothing more than a necessary expense incident to a profitable trade. Incidentally these piratical expeditions developed a race of fighters without their equal in the world. It was, however, only the financial support of Edmond Pearsall and his associates which kept these expeditions afloat, and while many of them were financial failures, and even though many of them went down in defeat before the enemy, yet on the whole they were profitable in that they enabled the merchants of the Staple to maintain this foreign trade. It is to these merchants, like Edmond Pearsall and his associates, who furnished the capital to finance the expeditions, and to the captains and crews who did the fighting, that England owes her remarkable extension in landed possessions and in maritime influence under Queen Elizabeth. It is only fair to say that this informal warfare was also engaged in by their competitors, specially the Spanish merchantmen, with equal fervor and spirit, coupled with a determination to keep this foreign trade away from the English merchant.

Apart from the solid gains that England won and the great prestige thereby acquired, there was considerable profit to the individual, both merchant and

sailor, or the warfare would have ceased. Edmond Pearsall acquired immense wealth at this time, so much so as to excite the covetousness of his brothers, specially his brother Robert, who insisted on investing a sum of money with Edmond Pearsall to be employed in this highly profitable trade. This was the turning point in the career of Edmond Pearsall, and, as events subsequently happened in his life history, it would have saved him lots of trouble and an ignominious business failure, as well as a sad death in a debtor's prison, had he refused to handle this money for his brother Robert. For all of the troubles of Edmond Pearsall had their beginning, their continuance, and their sad ending in this unfortunate kindness towards his brother. This will all be referred to more specifically as this narrative proceeds.

The irregular maritime warfare of the Elizabethan era must have been excessively galling to Spain, particularly when it was found impossible to reach the individual through the regular channel of international intercourse between two nations which were supposed to be at peace with each other. To show how high-handedly this warfare was carried on by the expeditions sent out by Edmond Pearsall and his fellow merchants, it is related in the history of the time that Queen Elizabeth was on one occasion constrained to make some kind of reparation when Drake's enormities were brought to her notice by the Spanish Ambassador, although in public language she defended him. Thereby she evidenced how powerfully influential the merchant and freebooter class had become at this time in the government of England. The merchants were now rich enough to finance the wars in which England engaged to conquer the Spanish and other nations, while the list of these freebooters includes the name of every captain who subsequently made the English navy respected over the entire world. Even the fleet which in 1588 sailed from England against the Spanish Armada had been raised as a joint venture by the merchants of England who looked upon it largely as a more extended and concentrated operation in their long-continued warfare against the Spanish. This fleet included many merchant vessels, as well as the armed men-of-war of their freebooting expeditions. These vessels and the money to support them was mostly furnished by Edmond Pearsall and his associates of the Grocers Guild. As a fact every trading company enjoying a share of England's foreign trade contributed heavily in men, money and vessels. And so far as the owners of these vessels were concerned, they were dispatched on this expedition both with a desire of gain to the participants in the pool, and on the chance that thereby the Spaniard would be so crippled as to make him harmless against their vessels that sailed in trade; as well as for the political advantage to be gained to England through a naval victory over the Spaniards. The expedition which was sent the next year under Drake was a joint-stock venture, entered into primarily for the purpose of recouping the adventurers in the fleet that went against the Armada for their expenses in that glorious victory. This was, however, the last national command held in time of war by Drake, who thereafter devoted himself to the service of the merchants, in preying on the Spanish treasure ships. [The Political History of England, vol. 6 of the series, by A. F. Pollard, page 410.] The freebooting sea captain and the piratical expeditions sent out by the merchants were soon absorbed by the regular establishment of the Eng-

lish Navy. The merchants became more and more powerful as the years rolled by, and it was on Edmond Pearsall and his associate merchants that England had to depend for the planting of her colonies on the American continent and elsewhere throughout the world.

It seems remarkable that these merchants were able to carry on these world-wide ventures without the assistance of the modern system of banking, with its means for transferring credits to all the civilized parts of the earth. For at this time there were no banks in England, so the merchants deposited their surplus bullion and money in the mint at the Tower of London. While the English producer of the Staple articles of trade would get from the merchant to whom he sold the same a credit balance for the amount of his sale for which he did not at the time ask cash from the merchant, and he would draw against this balance from time to time as he needed supplies, which the merchant would either buy for him, or sell him, out of his own stock, or the merchant would from time to time send him money at his request. It is needless to say that with so much actual money being transported over England in satisfaction of these requests the occupation of a highway-man was profitable and lucrative. Hence we find the tales about England, during this period, abound with incidents relating to highway robbery. Edmond Pearsall always carried with him large sums of money in his travels to and from the country districts of England so as to have the ready funds with which to buy the products of the Staple and the other commodities which entered into the domestic and foreign trade of London. At other times he would send by the stage coaches large sums of money to his customers in all parts of England, particularly into Staffordshire, Salop, Worcestershire, Warwickshire and Lincolnshire. Sometimes as high as three hundred pounds were sent in a single shipment, as is noticed by J. R. Booth in his booklet on Stone in Staffordshire. Hence Edmond Pearsall and the other merchants of England were essentially bankers, and were charged with all the duties now performed by such institutions. It was the possession of this machinery, in connection with their business, that enabled them to carry on mercantile and other transactions involving the payment of money in the most distant parts of the world. While on the face of many of the transactions which have come down to us from Edmond Pearsall's foreign trade it appears that he was essentially a barterer for wares, yet a careful analysis discloses that it was in all essentials the counterpart of modern trade with its payments of money or the transfer of credits. [Social England, by Traill and Mann, vol. IV, page 623.]

The gentleman of landed estate would also from time to time have surplus funds for which he had no immediate call, and such moneys he would try to get into the hands of Edmond Pearsall, or one of the other merchants, who would pay him interest for the use of the money. Hence the merchants were like modern banks with deposits for which they must find use so that they could pay for the same when demanded, together with interest or use for the same. This made Edmond Pearsall at all times have command of large sums of money with which he could finance any enterprise which appealed to him as promising large profits. As was to be expected his brothers and other members of the family took advantage of his prosperity to venture with him quite large sums of money which

by his management yielded very excellent returns. Among the rest who thus ventured their money with him was, as has already been stated, his brother Robert Peshall of Blore Pipe, in Staffordshire. As the outcome of this depositing on interest by Robert Peshall was to have so marked an influence on the life of Edmond Pearsall, we shall at this time relate the whole story of the loan to the end that the reader may have all the facts before him in such shape as will enable him to carefully study the details of this overshadowing incident in his life history.

Edmond Pearsall has left a record of how it came about that his brother Robert had an interest in the financial outcome of his business as a merchant of the Staple in the City of London. He says that in 1582 Robert Peshall, being his brother, and having some stock in money was desirous to put his said stock in moneys into his, Edmond Pearsall's hands, to be employed by him in his trade to gain or lose as the same should fall out. And at this and subsequent times he received from the said Robert a total sum of eight or nine hundred pounds sterling and no more, to be employed in this business. In the suit in Chancery brought by Edmond after the death of his brother Robert Peshall, this same question was presented, namely, what was the purpose of this investment made by Robert Peshall with his brother, and beginning in 1582 was it a loan or did Robert Peshall intend a partnership? At this time it was pleaded by his daughter and heir, that Robert Peshall having gathered a good estate of money together, and being willing and intending safely to dispose thereof by way of some intention of the said Robert Peshall, the said Edmond Pearsall taking notice thereof for his own good, and for the betterment of his estate and credit, and to make a show to other estate, being a merchant of the Staple of London, desired to borrow upon interest part of the estate of money of the said Robert Peshall, or so much thereof as the said Robert would lend him, the said Edmond, without security, which the said Robert condescended unto for the good and great credit and advancement of the said Edmond Pearsall, being a brother and a merchant. The said Robert did on or about the year 1582 lend unto Edmond Pearsall the sum of twenty-five hundred pounds at interest (this answer shows that they had no personal knowledge as to the amount of the loan) which money was to be well and truly repaid by Edmond Pearsall with such use, i.e. interest, as was due for the forbearance thereof for all the time it rested in the hands of the said Edmond Pearsall. As to this Edmond likewise says [Chancery Proceedings, Charles I., Bundle 53 and 48 and Bundle 65, No. 37] that when he settled with his brother the latter would not bear any of the losses in business, and that he had to pay him the same as if it was a straight loan. From which it appears certain that Edmond Pearsall when he stated that his brother Robert became a partner in his business, he had been led by his Counsel, learned in the law, to plead to the deduction of law resulting from the subsequent actions of these brothers with reference to the business of Edmond Pearsall as a merchant of the Staple of London, when he speaks of Robert Peshall as his partner. Hence, we may conclude with certainty that Robert Peshall, in 1582, loaned his brother Edmond Pearsall the sum of nine hundred pounds Sterling. This in present day money would be about fifty thousand dollars. It did not exceed this sum, as is clearly shown by the difficulties experienced by the heir of Robert to show that there

was any balance due by Edmond Pearsall in a true final settlement of the account with his brother Robert, or with the latter's heirs, Sir Humphrey Styles and his wife, Elizabeth, the daughter and heir of Robert Peshall. The latter had no knowledge of the transactions between the two brothers except such as they gleaned from the memorandum of settlement made in 1614 between them, hence they confused an item of £2500 as being a loan, whereas it had an entirely different history as a business transaction between the said brothers as will clearly appear from the following statement of the facts involved in the transaction. About 1535 the matter of so many of the newly rich bearing coats of arms to which they were not entitled became such a scandal that already the Visitations were impending. As a consequence all the families of England who had long been accustomed to bear such arms began searches for the proof of their right to bear the arms. Among the rest who undertook to gather such proof was Thomas Pershall the oldest brother of Edmond Pearsall and Robert Peshall. At this time there was a man by the name of Sampson Erdeswicke, a very competent genealogist, who was doing the same work for practically every family of standing in Staffordshire. Thomas Pershall employed him to make a pedigree of the Peshall family so far as it applied to the branch of the same that had been resident at Horsley for several generations. It is his pedigree which appears in the charts which are preserved by the officers of the crown who subsequently received the proofs for Staffordshire gentry and allowed their right severally to certain armorial bearings. This brought Sampson Erdeswicke into close and intimate association with all the members of the Pershall family of Horsley, particularly with Robert Pershall of Blore Pipe and his brother Edmond Pearsall, merchant of the Staple of London. Shortly after this Sampson Erdeswicke found himself in need of ready money so he prevailed upon Robert Peshall to assist him in selling a certain leasehold which Erdeswicke then owned. In pursuance of this desire Robert Peshall purchased a lease of 21 years of the farm called Saughton in Cheshire of Sampson Erdeswicke for £300 and within a year Sampson Erdeswicke did repurchase the same of the said Robert who did agree with Erdeswicke £300 for the same, and the said Sampson Erdeswicke together with Styles and Erdeswicke as further by the appointment of Robert Peshall and without Edmond Pearsall's privity did enter a statute staple to him for the payment of the said £300 together with £15 interest for the same at the end of each quarter, Edmond having no money of Robert Peshall's in his hands at this time. That is to say, instead of making this note of Erdeswicke's payable to Robert Peshall, they made the same payable to Edmond Pearsall. This note or Statute Staple, Robert Peshall deposited with his brother Edmond Pearsall as cash, and entreated Edmond to allow him use upon use for the same, as Edmond Pearsall afterwards did for the moneys deposited with him by Robert Peshall upon the latter's affirmation that Edmond should not be loser thereby should Erdeswicke fail to pay the same. Erdeswicke failed to pay the money at the end of the quarter and has ever since, but he paid a year and a half interest and no more. Shortly after this Erdeswicke (1603) died, whereupon Edmond Pearsall took out an extension and extended the lands of Sampson Erdeswicke (a writ of Extent is a writ of execution against the lands of a debtor). Shortly after the issuing of the writ of

execution the son and heir of Sampson Erdeswicke named Richard, an infant of three years of age who was in ward to his late majesty, and Mary Erdeswicke, his mother, acting as guardian or committee of said ward, sued Edmond Pearsall in the court of ward, and thereupon he was stayed by injunction of that court from further prosecution of the said extent until the said ward should come of the age of twenty-one years, whereby Edmond Pearsall could not for the space of nearly twenty-one years get or receive the said £300, nor any interest for the same, nor did he ever get any satisfaction for the same. Yet nevertheless, for that time, that is to say from thence to 1614, Edmond Pearsall in the settlement of his accounts with his brother was charged by Robert Peshall with compound interest (i.e. interest on interest) for the same, which in that time made the £315 amount to £2563, whereas Edmond Pearsall received far less than the said principal of £315 by decree of the court of ward.

This sum of £2563 was the first item in the account settled between Edmond Pearsall and Robert Peshall; hence Sir Humphrey Styles and his wife were in error in stating it as having been loaned all at one time. This transaction would have turned out all right so far as Edmond Pearsall was concerned had he made his brother endorse the Statute Staple and thereby guaranteed its payment as, in the form it was made over to Edmond Pearsall, it was insisted by Robert Peshall that it was accepted by Edmond Pearsall as the equivalent of cash money. It is more than possible that Edmond Pearsall had no thought that any such trick was being played upon him by making him accept Erdewicke's debt as the equivalent for ready money, although such was the intimacy between them at the time that it may be that Edmond Pearsall was willing to accept Erdewicke's obligation at its face value. It is interesting to note that Edmond Pearsall after this never complains of Erdewicke's failure to pay as in any way diminishing his regard for his old friend. Nor was the transaction entirely irregular as it must be kept in mind that the merchants of those days were, as we have already said, really bankers as well as sellers of merchandise. It is also well established that Edmond Pearsall received many similar loans or deposits from others, specially with the members of his family at Horsley and elsewhere in England. It will save repetition if we say that Edmond Pearsall subsequently paid his brother out of these moneys so deposited with him the following among other items of money, to wit: Edmond Pearsall paid to Sir Robert Bosville by the appointment or direction of Robert Peshall for the marriage of his daughter Elizabeth £666, 13 s, 4 d.

Edmond Pearsall purchased for Robert Peshall the Abbey of Pliroastle and divers land thereto belonging of £250 per annum, paying for the same the sum of £3000, which was chargeable against the moneys of Robert in his hands which amounted originally to only less than £900.

Edmond Pearsall paid to Robert Peshall every year while the said loan was in his hands from £200 to £400 all of which was gotten solely by Edmond's industry and paid by him, use upon use, for the said money and the increase thereof, all of which was to Edmond's hindrance and the great enrichment of Robert Peshall.

Edmond Pearsall says that the special journeys required by Robert Peshall for his own affairs at the hands and person of Robert Peshall required that he

would have to ride all the way down to Blore Pipe, a distance of 300 miles, and that in these journeys Edmond expended over the sum of £100 and that Robert never gave him any money or other requittal on this account.

Edmond Pearsall maintained the separate establishment of Elizabeth Peshall, daughter of Robert Peshall, and as wife of Sir Robert Bosville for the space of seven years, upon Robert's faithful promise that he would repay the amount of the same to Edmond, who paid out divers sums of money for her apparel and other occasions, but Edmond never received any recompense or satisfaction for the same of Robert or from any one else by his direction.

Edmond Pearsall paid for Robert Peshall to the then Bishop of Coventry and Lichfield in the year 1598 by the direction of the said Robert Peshall and for his use the sum of £200.

It is evident that on the face of this account, debtor and creditor, Robert Peshall was indebted to his brother Edmond Pearsall. This will be discussed more in detail when we shall have reached the time of settlement between these brothers.

The system by which the merchants of London endorsed the obligations of others, which thereby became negotiable and vendable, to those who had money to loan, frequently involved the merchant in personal loss. The case of Pershall Versus Cheyney in the Public Record Office, London [Chancery Proceedings Queen Elizabeth, 1558-1603, Bundle 17, No. 37] gives an interesting history of such a transaction which involved Edmond Pearsall in a loss along with his brother and cousin. It appears that one William Dormer of Farminghe in the County of Northampton, borrowed money on certain obligations which he negotiated through Edmond Pearsall and which the latter endorsed before selling some of these obligations to his older brother Thomas Pershall of Horsley, and to his cousin William Pershall of Pryors Court, in the County of Hereford. Before the obligations were paid William Dormer died having made his last will and testament in which he appointed Francis Cheyney, Esquire, Robert Spencer, Christopher Hood, Robert Alcocke, John Dunickley and Henry Lucas the executors thereof. The said William Dormer left a considerable estate in money and chattels and was also seized in fee of the manor of Farminghe in the county of Northampton. At this time he was indebted to Thomas Pershall, on one of the said obligations in the sum of eight and twenty pounds. To Edmond Pearsall, citizen and Grocer of London, in the sum of two hundred marks and to William Pearsall in the sum of fifty pounds. All of the executors refused to act except Francis Cheyney, Esquire, who sold the goods and chattels, as well as the said manor, using the money to satisfy the legacies given by the will of William Dormer, deceased. By some way or other Francis Cheyney procured possession of the bonds, and this bill in equity was to compel him to produce the same and to pay the sum out of the moneys in his hands belonging to the estate of the said William Dormer.

To resume the story of Edmond Pearsall, the political conditions and the collection of export taxes were such as to make it advantageous for an English merchant to have a trading station in Holland, particularly at that great free trade mart, Middleburg with its harbor at Flushing. It was circa 1584, that



Edmond Pearsall opened a branch business place in Middleburg and Flushing, Holland, which was primarily for the extension of his business affairs, but which shortly afterwards came to be very serviceable to those who were engaged in the conspiracy to bring King James of Scotland to the English throne as the successor and heir to Queen Elizabeth. Edmond Pearsall placed his brother James Pershall in charge of this station and it is also known that in some way Sir Matthew Arundel of Warde, utilized this Holland connection in the same propaganda. [Historical Mss. Commission Hatfield House London 1814, part 5, page 226.] The story of the connection of Edmond Pearsall and his brother with this plot has been told in detail in connection with the story of Thomas Pershall, brother of Edmond Pearsall, and will be found in Chapter 26, Section 3, to which the reader is referred for further information. It will be sufficient at this time to say that it was entirely due to the plotting of these associators that King James of Scotland became King James I of England upon the death of Queen Elizabeth in 1603. This branch place of business, located in Middleburg, and its seaport Flushing, was a very far-sighted move on the part of Edmond Pearsall and, as we shall presently see, was to have a very marked influence upon the descendants of Edmond Pearsall in America. At the same time it must have been very profitable, as the trade from Holland to England included jewels and precious stones, silver, bullion, quicksilver, wrought silks, cloth of gold, gold and silver thread, camblets, grograms, spices, drugs, sugar, cotton, cummin galls, linen fine and coarse, demi-ostades, madder, hops in great quantity, glass, salt fish, metallic and other merceries of all sorts to a great value, arms of all kinds, ammunition for war, and household furniture. From England, Holland received vast quantities of fine and coarse draperies, fringes and other things of that kind to a great value, the finest wool, excellent saffron in small quantities, a great quantity of lead and tin, sheep and rabbit skins without number, and various other sorts of fine peltry and leather, beer, cheese and other sorts of provisions; also Malmsey wines which the English imported from Candia. It will be noticed that English exports were still mostly in the form of raw material. Much of the English cloths, stuffs, and wools were exported again from Holland to Italy, Scandinavia and other parts of Europe, whereby Edmond Pearsall had merchant vessels sailing out of both Flushing in Holland, and London in England.

It also added greatly to the profits of the English merchant to be an exporter of England's products and at the same time be the importer of the wares of some foreign country, specially Holland. Edmond Pearsall had learned this in his intercourse with the trade of the Mediterranean and to the Far East, hence he was early among those merchants of the Staple who opened places of business in Holland, particularly in Middleburg, and its seaport Flushing, which were in fact English towns within the bounds of the Low Country.

By the year 1587 Edmond Pearsall had outgrown, in his business dealings, the narrow confines of the old merchant ship of the Staple, so we find that he joined the Grocers Guild where he was in closer association with those who were venturing, along with him, to the farthestmost parts of the business world. They were the largest operators in the business of London, which is to say that they were the heaviest dealers in all the world. They formed in the Grocers Guild the

most powerful business association of their day, whether they were considered as an entirety or with reference severally to the great merchants who composed the guild. [English Guilds by Harrison, page cxii.] It might be well to call attention to the fact that the Bank of England was organized primarily about the Grocers Guild and today occupies the site of its old Hall. The exact date of the admittance of Edmond Pearsall to the Grocers Guild cannot be ascertained as some of the books containing the wardens' accounts are missing, including the one containing the entries of the dates of admission of members. The first reference to Edmond Pearsall in the Grocers Company is in 1589, when he paid brotherhood money to the company, and is entered as Edmund Piersall. In May, 1596, Mr. Edmund Piersall was elected to the livery of the company of the Grocers Guild of London, and as showing how completely these guilds and merchants' associations controlled the trade of England, particularly its foreign trade, it has been said by a competent observer that by the end of the reign of Elizabeth, France was almost the only country with which English merchants could trade without being members of a company. The system thus built up was open to many of the abuses that accompany monopolies. It may however be noticed that it is doubtful whether in Elizabeth's reign freedom of foreign trade was desirable. It was the prospect of obtaining special privileges which encouraged merchants to open up new and hazardous markets and the organization of such merchants into companies provided a means of protection against the oppressions of the foreign, and often half barbarous, powers with whose subjects the merchants wished to trade [Social England, Vol. III, page 504], and enabled them to overcome the ships of the pirates who preyed upon this commerce and the men-of-war of the nations which attempted to prevent it. Edmond Pearsall was therefore most fortunate to have associated himself with such a company, even though he was an exceedingly heavy individual trader.

It was the part of long-headed business judgment for Edmond Pearsall to so arrange his affairs as to increase his foreign trade, which he did by becoming associated with the Grocers Guild. And, so far as the old trade in the staple was concerned, it is the characteristic feature of the close of the reign of Queen Elizabeth, that in England the transition stage from tillage to sheep farming came to an end. The balance was once more restored between them. Enclosures continued to be made throughout the sixteenth century, but at the end of the period the high prices of English wood declined and at the same time the value of corn and meat rose rapidly. Hence a stimulus was given to arable farming which provided employment for the rural population, which of course greatly decreased the amount of the Staple to be handled by Edmond Pearsall and other merchants of the Staple. A long time before this, it had been seen that as the commons began to be extensively enclosed the quality of the fleeces deteriorated. Heavier animals, better suited to fat pastures and producing coarse but abundant wool were introduced. English wool lost its preeminence and, though still obtaining high prices, was no longer indispensable to the weaver. This decrease in value was at least as influential as the Acts of Parliament in checking the conversion of arable land to pasture. The last of these acts was passed in 1597 and provided for the reconversion of all arable land that during the reign of Elizabeth had been

diverted to pasture, and that none then under plough should be laid down to grass. This marked the point of time when the wool staple was no longer the preeminent ruler of England's merchandising.

And although after this Edmond Pearsall continued to handle the products of the Staple, including wool, wool fells and cloths, broad cloths and leather, nevertheless he also became more largely interested in all the other merchantable products of England, particularly such as entered into the foreign trade. Hence he was all the while a continuous and persistent trader, among other places, to the Mediterranean and the Far East. In Sir Walter Raleigh's *Observations concerning the Trade and Commerce of England*, he informed King James that whereas down to about 1590 a store of goodly English ships went annually to Russia, only four had gone in 1600, and only two or three in 1602. Notwithstanding which the records disclose that Edmond Pearsall as late as 1609 traded in the ship *Trinity* of London with Thomas Crowther, Master, to Alexandria in Egypt, and that through John Warren as factor, he sold goods in Grand Cairo, in Egypt, on this same voyage. That the same year, in the ship *Hercules*, he had a venture to Aleppo in Servia, and that he had other ventures during the same year to the same port in the ships *Darling* of London, and *Centurion* also of London, and in the ship *The Greater Defense* of London, in the China trade, whereby he imported silks into London. And that the same vessels, the *Hercules* and *Centurion*, had sailed for him to Aleppo, in 1608, all under the care of the Turkey Company, and that as a result of these ventures Edmond Pearsall also imported Cinnamon, Indigo and Rhubarb in bulk for the English trade. His outward cargoes had been largely broad cloths and kersies so far as his own part of the cargoes were concerned. [Chancery Proceedings, James I, bundle 24, No. 30.]

At a Court Meeting of the Grocers Guild on July 28, 1606, Edmond Piersall was elected a member of the Court. He was elected third Warden of the Grocers Guild July 12, 1608.

In 1609 Edmond Pearsall had to pay the default of his brother warden Timothy Bathurst to the amount of £368 because he knew of Warden Bathurst's insolvency to the Grocers Guild. He is also mentioned as having been present the same year at several meetings of the Grocers Guild when the new or second Virginia company was under consideration. This Timothy Bathurst was son of Robert Bathurst of Horsemenden, Kent. This Robert Bathurst was brother to Edward Bathurst of Staplehurst, Kent, the father of Launcelot Bathurst, who was father of Maria Bathurst the wife of Edmond Pearsall. Thus we see that Edmond Pearsall's father-in-law was first cousin to this Timothy Bathurst. [Thoresby's *History of Leeds*, page 16.]

This brings the history of Edmond Pearsall to the time of the second Virginia Company, in 1609, in the organization of which he and his friends, and the several members of his family to the remotest degree of relationship, had an important share. In fact if the records were fully disclosed it would appear that they were among the heaviest contributors to the very much needed funds. This interest in the affairs of the Virginia Company was no doubt brought about by Edmund Pearsall, for every member of the family subscribed, either directly or through him, and practically every relative by marriage did likewise.

A Fitz Alan now sat upon the throne of England and it was only natural that the Pershalls should greatly favor anything desired by their king to whom they were allied by family ties as well as by loyalty and fealty. Moreover, Thomas Pershall, the brother of Edmund Pearsall, in helping to bring about the change of dynasty, had gotten into serious trouble by being party with those who, to give it the mildest designation, were preparing for the succession of King James of Scotland to the English throne. And manifestly the Pershalls-Pearsalls would be closely associated with any enterprise which had the personal backing of King James. The business house maintained by Edmond Pearsall in Middleburg, Holland, had been found to be a very safe place of retreat for those whose acts had become so notorious in the behalf of King James when he was King of Scotland that they were compelled to leave England. Also his ships regularly sailing between London and Flushing were manned by crews, and commanded by captains and mates, who could be trusted as loyal to the pretensions of King James of Scotland to the English throne. Hence these vessels regularly carried distinguished men and women of the Kingdom of Great Britain who were either fleeing from or returning to England, and who had in view as a common objective the bringing about of succession of the House of Stuart to the House of Tudor on the English throne. As these acts occurred before the death of the great Elizabeth, it must have been looked upon by King James as evidence of deep and special interest by the Pershall-Pearsall family in his behalf. There was therefore every reason why the king in organizing the second Virginia Company, should be favorably inclined toward Edmond Pearsall and his family and friends, and should grant to him a most valuable concession in this new colonial venture. We can therefore well understand why the Charter of the Virginia Company of London gives, among others, the names of so many members of the Grocers' Guild as the members of the second Virginia Company. The General Historie of Virginia, New England and the Summer Isles, by Captaine John Smith, published in 1624, contains a list of "The Names of the Adventurers for Virginia Alphabetically set downe, according to a printed Booke, set out by the Treasurer and Councell in this present yeare," 1620, and amongst these names are those of Edmund Peashall and Timothie Bathurst.

The settlement of Virginia was a purely commercial enterprise, notwithstanding the charter made the strongest expression of religious sentiment and purposes, and although a clergyman of the established church accompanied the first colony to Jamestown. No doubt the English Crown was honest and truthful in its desire for the spread of religion, especially of the Established Church of England, for that was the special mark of loyalty to the English king. In this venture the greatest of England's statesmen, the richest and most powerful of her merchants, the flower of her nobility, the highest ecclesiastical authorities, in fact the rich and eminent of every walk in life, all joined together with the Crown to make Virginia a real jewel in the diadem of the English nation. Among the merchants who engaged whole-heartedly in this enterprise was Edmond Pearsall, Citizen and Grocer of London.

It must not be supposed, however, that this was the first effort that had been made to open the American Continent to English settlement. This had begun

as early as 1578, so far as the Chesapeake Bay Country was concerned, by the patent to Sir Humphrey Gilbert for the planting of people in America and this had been followed by a series of like failures, including the effort made in 1600-1607 to found an English colony on the mainland of America in Virginia. The second or new Company succeeded where the others failed because the self interest of the leading merchants demanded that such a permanent foothold be obtained by England on the western shores of the Atlantic Ocean. It was just as true at that time as it is today that the nation which controls or dominates an ocean by its men-of-war is the ruling factor in the commerce that floats thereon, no matter what other nation may rule the lands bordering thereon. But no nation can hope to permanently control the commerce of any ocean where it does not have some port thereon in which its vessels can find safe harbor from its enemies.

The far-sighted merchants of England, specially of the Grocers Guild, and of Middleburg and Flushing in Holland, had come to discern most clearly that in all their warfare, notwithstanding repeated victories on the western waters of the Atlantic Ocean, against the Spaniard, the advantage all the time had been with the Don, and that this would continue as long as this nation was holding its own upon the lands which it had colonized in the New World and held the ports which dominated the commerce, or at least threatened the commerce, of the waters bounding thereon. It was evident that England must secure a foothold upon the main before it was too late, or the Spaniard, by the law of increase of population, plus the advantages of location, and plus the production of articles of world-wide trade, would come off the final victor. The merchants of the Grocers Guild, including Edmond Pearsall, had experienced no insurmountable difficulties in carrying their men through many winters in the New World, whenever it had happened that it was necessary for the men or the vessels to remain in America and out of England, during this season. Hence the problem of founding a colony in Virginia did not present any difficulties but such as they knew how to meet and overcome. The real serious question was as to the commerce that could be developed by the port they intended to establish in connection with this Colony of Virginia. The products that had been produced by the first colony had not proven to be of such universal demand as to call for a world-wide trade centering at this port. So that after all it was possible that the Spaniard with his sugar and rum might have the better of the effort to control the commerce of the American continent. It was, as we shall presently see, Edmond Pearsall who created the world-wide trade for the product which made the port of Virginia the controlling place in America.

In pursuance of the desire to create trade and to center large wealth in this new colony, privileges in trade and rights of government were granted to certain individuals, primarily as a means of raising the funds with which to settle the colony, but more strongly for the hope that thereby the rich and powerful concessioners would support and maintain the colony, out of their private purses, to the end that their several monopolies might be made profitable. For example Lord De la Ware received the appointment of Governor for life [The Genesis of the U. S., vol. 1, page 225], while Edmond Peshall and Edmund White, grocers trading in the city of London, received the grant of the exclusive sale of tobacco,

or the collection of an import of two shillings per pound on tobacco imported for ten years, obligating themselves, however, to pay to the King, whether the imposts amounted to so much or not, the sum of 3500 pounds sterling the first year and 7000 pounds sterling per year thereafter, with sole power to import tobacco, and to name persons for selling the same, with a proviso of determination at six months notice if found prejudicial to the State. The amount of this tax to be paid by Edmond Pearsall and his associates, if converted to present day values of money, would be two hundred and fifty thousand dollars for the first year, and five hundred thousand dollars for the second and succeeding years. This was not confirmed until May 29, 1615, but it was effective from the date of its grant, and it appears to have been continued in force only until 1620. At the time it was granted this was not looked upon as a very desirable concession. For such a vast trade in tobacco, a commodity which hardly existed, was not to be even dreamed of, let alone accomplished. And although Edmond Pearsall was himself a man of the highest financial ability, he had, the people thought, simply gone wild over the possibilities of the tobacco trade. There was bound to be nothing come of such foolish promises of these large payments into the King's treasury. But the energy and wealth of the concessioners, combined with the discovery of the preeminent adaptability of Virginia to the growth of tobacco, plus the ease of production, plus a growing demand for the same, quickly changed this view as to the value of this grant. Robert Pearsall, son of Edmond, was dispatched in 1609 on the first fleet to Virginia to arrange for the growth of tobacco by the colonists. He remained there until 1612.

There is no question but that the history of the colony of Virginia centers around its production of tobacco. And likewise the early history of the Pearsalls who at this time came to America, no matter how they may spell their names today, finds therein, as we shall presently see, its controlling and guiding influence. A very eminent historian has recently said: That Virginia enjoys the distinction of being the first permanent English Colony to be founded in America, is due mainly to the rapidity with which mankind adopted the practice of using tobacco in one form and another. Notwithstanding many prohibitions by the different governments, the tobacco habit spread throughout Christendom faster than any religion or language has ever spread. From the moment that the production of tobacco became profitable the future of Virginia was assured. [Student's History of the United States by Edward Channing, page 56.] In fact tobacco came to be so assiduously cultivated in Virginia as to take the attention of the planters from raising corn, so that later grain became scarce and supplies had to be purchased from England or the other colonies. But neither Edmund Pearsall nor his sons or grandsons were ever tobacco planters although, as the colony prospered, there came a time when the fields, gardens, public squares, and even the streets of Jamestown were planted with tobacco. This was because the weed became an article of such universal desire that it was practically the money of the colony of Virginia. Private debts, as well as public salaries and officers' fees, were paid in tobacco, and the Statute books where they mentioned money, also mention the equivalent in tobacco. The salaries of the rectors of the churches were paid in tobacco, the amount in pounds being fixed by Statute; with the result that the

bad quality of tobacco in certain parishes left them almost without the ministrations of the established church. This was specially the case in Nansemond County. The Reverend Hugh Jones, writing of this section in 1724, says some parishes are long vacant on account of the badness of tobacco, which gives room for dissension; that is to say for non-conformist churches to thrive.

Many have marvelled that such monopolies should have been granted at this time to the subscribers to the fund for the founding of the colony of Virginia under this the second Virginia company, but it must be remembered that it was not until 1624 that the granting of monopolies was made illegal by act of Parliament.

From a fashion of the Court introduced by Raleigh, the use of tobacco became so common in England that in 1614 a member of Parliament said in a speech in the House of Commons, many divines now smell of tobacco and poor men spend 4 pence of their wages at night in smoke. The increasing consumption greatly alarmed the King for the morals of his subjects who were equally deaf to his arguments and remonstrances. The industry increased wonderfully. Upon an average, of the seven years immediately preceding the year 1620, when this concession to the Pearsalls seems to have been revoked, the whole import of tobacco into England amounted to one hundred and forty-two thousand pounds weight, so remarkable had been the stimulation of this industry.

Tobacco immediately became the money commodity of commerce in every quarter of the world. It was the one product which merchants everywhere were willing to buy for gold. As a consequence Edmond Pearsall and his associates became possessed of large amounts of ready money which they used in various ventures within the kingdom of England. There were many pieces of choice land picked up by them at this time and more than one family who can now refer to their ancestor as a baronet finds that this honor and dignity had its origin in the profits from the tobacco venture of Edmond Pearsall and that the dignity was supported by the landed estates acquired at this time. Robert Peashall, brother of Edmond Pearsall, dreamed of founding several families of Peshall among the baronets, and as he was without male heirs he determined to begin by making his nephew John Pershall of Horsley, the oldest son of his deceased and eldest brother Thomas Pershall, a baronet. This was accomplished in 1612, and Edmond Pearsall, at the request of Robert Peshall, paid for the baronetship of Sir John Peshall, for now they began to call themselves Peshall, the sum of £1237 8s 6d. Some of this money, however, represents expenditures for other purposes in the same connection. But all of which money was expended by Edmond Pearsall at the request and for the account of his brother Robert Peshall. [Chancery Proceedings, Charles I, Bundle 53, No. 48; Bundle 65, No. 37.]

In considering the activities of Edmond Pearsall we must not lose sight of the fact that while he was developing the vast tobacco trade of Virginia he was carrying on his regular business as a merchant of the Grocers Guild, engaged in the foreign trade of England to the uttermost parts of the world. And that he was, according to the custom of merchants to which we have already reverted, carrying on an extensive banking business both in receiving deposits at interest and in investing the funds of others in interest-bearing securities, principally notes supported by adequate endorsement. A large part of this branch of banking,

as carried on at that time by the merchants, consisted in the merchant lending his name as an accommodation endorser upon the bonds and like obligations of individuals, who, while they had assets sufficient to support the loan, yet because these assets were not of a character that could be quickly realized upon in case of default, the merchant supplied this deficiency by his personal endorsement and guarantee that the debt would be paid at maturity. The non-payment of such an obligation would cause the merchant to pay the same to save the protest and loss of financial standing resulting from a default upon the obligation. Such endorsed obligations were considered as investments very much like the modern corporation bonds. The accounts of Edmond Pearsall disclose that he entered very largely into this system of financing whereby he usually made money but sometimes, as a matter of course, there was a loss. What is perhaps the most interesting of the occasions where he was threatened with a loss in this class of banking is disclosed in a certain Chancery proceeding in which, in 1612, Cuthbert Booth of London, Mercer, began a suit against Edmond Pearsall for an accounting of the various items between them growing out of a long series of endorsements that had been made by Edmond Pearsall on the obligations of Cuthbert Booth and his brother Roger Booth. They were related to the Pearsalls of Upper Toynton in Lincolnshire with whom Edmond Pearsall had many dealings, having also made his home with them when in that section of Lincolnshire in his many journeys when he was buying the staple products for sale in London or for export. In fact Cuthbert Booth's mother was a Pearsall, so that there was a distant cousinship between them. We have already set out in this history a photostat of this record so that it will not be necessary to refer to it to any great extent at this time. Among those to whom Edmond Pearsall had sold the obligations of the Booths, with his endorsement, appear the names of William Stepson Barnham, late Alderman of London, William Windsor, McCaffrey Ellways, William Orne and Sir John Hart. Among the debtors of the Booths appear Tyman Osboldstone of London, Anthony Crew, William Lloyd and Thomas Harradine. Among the items was a credit claimed for moneys received by Timothy Bathurst which, upon its subsequently appearing that he had not accounted for the same, Edmond Pearsall assumed this in part cancellation of the balance due him. Thus Edmond Pearsall repeated his action in the Grovers Guild by protecting the financial standing of Timothy Bathurst. It also appears that all the parties to the action had been sued in the Star Chamber at the suit of Lady Gresham and that there she had obtained judgment against Edmond Pearsall for costs which he had promptly paid. The whole matter was amicably settled so that in the final outcome there was no loss to Edmond Pearsall on account of this banking venture.

In 1614 Edmond Pearsall, having amassed a large fortune, and having reached the advanced age of over eighty-three years, determined to retire from active business and enjoy the large and continued income arising from his tobacco venture. He accordingly began to make settlement with those with whom he had accounts for money loaned to him on interest. Among these was his brother Robert Peshall, in which accounting it was claimed by Robert Peshall that there was due to him the sum of £1800. This balance coming about by the claim of Robert Peshall with reference to the obligation given by Sampson Erdeswicke



to which we have already alluded. It was then agreed between them that the matter should be referred to the award of Sir John Peshall and Sir Edmund Windsor, Knight, who upon hearing the differences adjudged that the account should be considered as having no balance either debtor or creditor. Nevertheless Robert prevailed upon his brother Edmond Pearsall, to lend him Edmond Pearsall's own personal accommodation-obligation of 600 and odd pounds, to the order of Robert Peshall, which he promised should never be defaulted against Edmond Pearsall. This obligation was divided into three equal sums payable within each of three years, which would make them mature respectively in 1615, 1616 and 1617. This obligation was never presented to Edmond for payment or to meet the default of Robert Peshall during any time while the brothers were both living, although long before the death of Robert Peshall in 1627, or before he made his will in 1622, these notes were long overdue. The first intimation that Edmond Pearsall had that they were held as a debt against him personally was the statement in Robert Peshall's will dated 1622 and proven in 1627, that Edmond, his brother, was indebted to him.

Were it not that the dealings and final settlement between Robert Peshall and his brother Edmond Pearsall resulted in such an unhappy catastrophe to Edmond Pearsall, one could laugh at the claims of Robert Peshall and admire the brotherly kindness of Edmond Pearsall in admitting and allowing the same. For at this time Robert Peshall claimed use upon use for his money, which is to say, he demanded that his loans be compounded at interest, whereas he insisted that payments to him were to be entirely without any interest charges whatsoever, either simple or compound, for the time the loan was in his brother's hands. In the answer of Sir Humphrey Styles and his wife Elizabeth, daughter and heir of Robert Peshall, to the claim of Edmond, they say that the balance due at this settlement was £1820 and odd sums in shillings and pence. This is also the figure stated by Edmond Pearsall, so that there can be no doubt about the correctness as to the sum claimed by Robert Peshall. Edmond Pearsall's account of the Erdeswicke loan gives the rule by which Robert Peshall compounded use upon use the moneys he had deposited with his brother Edmond Pearsall, hence it is possible to state quite accurately the account as presented to Edmond Pearsall by his brother Robert Peshall as follows:—

Debtor to Statute Staple of Sampson Erdeswicke 1579 for £315 compounded to total....	£ 2563
“ “ Cash loans aggregating £900 compounded to total.....	16963
Total.....	£19526
Creditor by 34 years annual payments.....	£10200
“ “ Marriage settlement of Elizabeth daughter of Robert when she married Bosville.....	666
“ “ Money paid Bishop of Coventry and Litchfield.....	200
“ “ Seven Years payments to her for support.....	1400
“ “ Purchase money paid for the Abbey of Pliroastle.....	3000
“ “ Money paid for baronetcy of Sir John Peshall.....	1237
Balance due Robert Peshall.....	1823
	£19526

It is evident that if plain simple interest had been allowed upon the payments made from time to time by Edmond Pearsall to his brother Robert Peshall the

latter would have been heavily indebted to Edmond Pearsall. By all the rules of common decency, and even according to the utmost desires of grasping greed, he should have been satisfied with the compromise by which he was given a scott free acquittance of the balance due by him to Edmond Pearsall. But the loss of the annual income was more than he could bear without feeling a strong desire to be again on his brother's bounty, hence he hoped that Edmond's retirement would only be temporary and he asked for the statute-staples to be held against the eventuality of the latter again being the lord bountiful, but he never presented a claim for the payment of these notes during his own lifetime, although Edmond Pearsall did reenter business. Nor was this the only advantage taken by Robert Peshall at this time for he was a conservative and could only see the rank that would come from the possession of large landed estates. But he despised the means whereby this wealth was obtained in trade. To him the feudal system was the acme of perfection, and rank, high rank in that system, the height of his ambition. It was this diversity of viewpoint that brought about the unwarranted and unlawful acts of Robert Peshall in applying to his own use and behoof the lands acquired by Edmond Pearsall, the title to which, for business reasons, was vested in Robert Peshall. It will assist the reader in grasping the terrible consequences which resulted from the misapplication of these conservative views if he will re-read the records given at the beginning of this section concerning the land holdings, title to which were in Edmond Pearsall at this time. If the reader will also, if he is interested in this subject, kindly turn to Chapter 26, Section 4, which relates to Robert Peshall, he will be able to see for himself which out of the long list of properties acquired by Robert Peshall after 1580 belonged of right and truth to Edmond Pearsall.

The trouble Edmond Pearsall had with his brother Robert Peshall was the only cloud upon the close of his business at this time. He accordingly retired to Bromley, in County Kent, where he hoped to spend his last years in the full enjoyment of his vast wealth and to live happily with his kin and neighbors.

At the time of his retirement from business, in 1615, Edmond Pearsall arranged his affairs so that his oldest son, Robert Pearsall, in pursuance of his uncle Robert's intention to make him a baronet, would have such of the landed estates of his father as were in the possession of the said Robert Peshall of Blore Pipe, belonging to Edmond Pearsall, and such other of the said Robert's own landed property as he should give the said Robert, his nephew, to support this dignity. Robert Pearsall Junior was a member of the Grocers Guild and he also succeeded to his father's business in London as a Grocer or importer. Edmond, the second son of Edmond Pearsall, was given certain lands at Bromley, Kent, presumably the lands above described. He was also to become a baronet according to the plans stated by his uncle Robert Peshall. Thomas Pearsall, the youngest son, was given the tobacco business in Virginia, and in Middleburg, Holland.

In this realignment of the interests formerly vested in Edmond Pearsall, the folks at Horsley, including Sir John Peshall and his family and their associates, cast their lot with Thomas Pearsall. This association, as we shall presently see, was to have a far-reaching effect upon the history of the Chesapeake Bay country, including Virginia and Maryland, as well as affecting and controlling the history

of the children of Thomas Pearsall, they having come to America and settled in the Chesapeake Bay country, along with their father, who was there counted as a Dutch-English trader, because of the old association of his father with Middleburg and Flushing in Holland.

However, Edmund Pearsall kept up his membership in the Grocers Guild, as witness the following from the records of the same:—"This day the letter of Mr. Edmond Peshall, one of the Assistants of this Corte, directed to this Corte bearing date the 13th day of this instant June (1616) was read. The tenor whereof ensueth vizt:—"To the Right Worshipful the Knights Alderman Mr. Wardens and Assistants of the Right Worshipfull Company of Grocers of the City of London, geve these Right Worshipful my humble duty remembred fforasmuch as by the auncient ordennces of Or Company warranted by his Matties Chre. I am by Ordenary course subgett to yor eleccoon to be one of yor Wardeins of the sayd Company for the yere ensueing and for that yt is well knowen unto you all that I have geven over my dwelling trading and livyng in the City and settled my self wholly wth my wife and family in the Countrey, by reason whereof I cannot geve such attendiance as the place requyreth my humble suyte and desire therefore is that yor Worshippes would be pleased to discharge me wholly from the supplying of that place of Wardenshipp hereafter, the rather for that my losses and charges hitherto borne and systenyed by reason of the Companyes services have been over great and burdensome to mee wch yf they be not to Yor Worshippes well knowen shalbe by me plainly manyfested yf you please, besydes other manyfold and great losses and other reasons best knowen to my self wch I can alledge yf need be I suppose welbe sufficient motives to perswade yor Worshippes to yeld to this my most reasonable request, the promissess considered I doubt not but that yor Worshippes will make that due consideration of me as in equity and confidence is fittyng, and afford mee the kine favor and curtisie as others have found in like case wherein you shall bind mee in all duty soe referring myself to yor good consideration not doubting of yor favor herein I take my leave and rest over and will Yor Worshippes to be comaunded, Edmond Peshall, From my Lodging in London, this 13 June, 1616.

'Whereupon, say the records of the Grocers Guild, this Corte after delibrate consideracon had It is ordred and agreed that the sayd Mr. Edmound Peshall shall be clierly discharged from the Service and excucon of the place of Wardenshipp of this Company for ever hereafter yf he will pay to Mr. Wardens of this Company now being to the use of this Company before the next day of Eleccoon of Wardens of the same Company the some of Fifty poyndes Sterling for a fyne ymposed on him by this Corte for not serving and executing the sayd place of Wardenshipp.' But sad to relate Edmond Pearsall did not avail himself of this opportunity to be relieved from duty, but came back into business, as is disclosed by the records of the Grocers Guild. At a Court held July 14, 1616, Mr. Edmond Peshall was elected First Warden, and apparently served his term of office. At this time Edmond Pearsall was between eighty-five and eighty-seven years of age. He could not have been very extensively engaged in business as he had practically disposed of the bulk of his estate at the time of his retirement from business in the preceding year.

And while the tobacco business had gone to Thomas Pearsall, the youngest son of Edmond Pearsall, yet all the old associators continued to be interested therein, including the several members of the immediate family of Edmond Pearsall, and money kept coming in from this source in a seemingly unending stream. The time soon arrived when the monopoly expired by the limitation named in the grant of the same, when originally made by the King. By this time there were many who hoped to have influence sufficiently great to secure to themselves this money-making concession. Hence the contest for its renewal became so strong that it was impossible, without creating considerable disturbance, to regrant this concession to any single individual or selected combination of individuals, even had the King been so inclined. The concession was therefore, in 1620, vested in the Virginia Company, which was charged with the duty of collecting the tobacco imposts, the distribution of the product, and the regulation of its sale. It was hoped that by this all might have an equal chance at this wealth-producing commodity and that the interests of the English government would be fully safeguarded. In the whole history of the English nation there never were, perhaps, such good intentions which went so far astray.

As long as Edmond Pearsall and his associates held the monopoly of the tobacco impost, it seems to have been regularly, uniformly and fairly imposed and collected. There was practically no smuggling and the tobacco produced was marketed in English bottoms, in which it was distributed to the home and foreign markets. But now, as we shall see, there began a time when the trader who paid the impost could not possibly meet the competition of those who neglected to do so. A time when the officers of foreign vessels of war actually engaged in smuggling tobacco, both out of Virginia and into their own country, without paying either the impost of Virginia or the tariff of their own country.

One result of this legislation was to place Thomas Pearsall and his associates, including his father, Edmond Pearsall, and his brother Robert Pearsall, on the same basis as all the other factors in England, except that they had their tobacco business thoroughly established and their grades and brands were well known in the market, but they had to meet the price competition of the richest merchants, not only from England, but from all the nations of Western Europe. The English government had become alarmed at the growth of the tobacco habit and attempted to control the same by limiting the quantity that might be vended in England in each year. The trade might be regulated and heavily taxed, but it could not be limited except according to the desires and demands of the consumers. The Virginia Company, finding itself possessed of the import monopoly which had previously been in the hands of Edmond Pearsall and his associates, determined to expand the tobacco trade to the utmost, notwithstanding the limitations placed thereon by the English Parliament. They evidently conceived that the Pearsalls would be able to hold their tobacco trade, so they looked for their larger profits in the increase of the business. The English government made the concession to the Virginia Company so broad that it included the products of the Summer Isles as well as Virginia. This gave the Virginia Company an opportunity to expand the tobacco trade while at the same time appearing to comply with the limitations of their grant.

July 18, 1620, the Virginia Company, with a desire, as the resolution expresses it, to help the planters on the Summer Islands, agreed that the entire 5500 weight of tobacco allowed to be vended in this Realm by both plantations should be supplied from the Summer Island plantations alone. Being resolved, as aforesaid, to protect the bringing into England of any tobacco from Virginia this year, but to send the same to Holland, namely to Flushing, Middleborough, or any other parts to be vended there, they did appoint a committee to consider and resolve of the fittest course to be taken for providing of a magazine or storehouse there and to treat with the State there for bringing in and carrying out the tobacco at the easiest rates. And to consider the best means also for the ordering and sale thereof by factors to the most advantage of the company and they compounded with the State of Middleborough for the customs of tobacco to be brought there from Virginia.

Middleborough was not a new place for the English merchants in which to do business. Here was a city, the richest and most prosperous in the world, which for more than half a century had been flooded with thousands of Englishmen, the most intelligent and active-minded of their race. [The Puritans in Holland, England and America, by Douglas Campbell, vol. ii, page 374.] The English merchants in large numbers, including Edmond Pearsall, who was represented by his brother James Pershall, had long been established in Middleburg and there were at this place those English merchants who, in 1598, were driven from Germany. At this time Jonas Pershall, the son and heir of James Pershall, was the resident partner for Thomas Pearsall in Middleburg and Flushing. The result of this resolution on the part of the Virginia Company was to transfer the foreign tobacco business to Holland. The other great merchants of London, not already established there, accordingly sent such forces as were needed to handle the business and following the usual British custom, they severally despatched a resident. It is needless to recall that Edmond Pearsall and his associates were not only heavy handlers of tobacco but that he had established the branch house at Middleburg in Holland, thirty years before this time, and that from here he engaged in international trade.

Mr. Arthur Swayne was appointed the Company's Factor, June 11, 1621, which really meant that he was the company's distributing agent, for example,—the ships *Duty* and *Bona Nova*, heavily laden with tobacco, returned from Virginia, one coming to anchor in the Downs, the other at the Isle of Wight. The *Bona Nova* alone had on board a cargo amounting to forty or fifty thousand pounds in weight, and stayed in port only long enough for direction from hence to what port she shall repayre. The Company ordered that the Master of the *Bona Nova* should depart instantly for the Port of Middleborough, in Zealand, and the *Duty* was commanded by the Company to set sail for Flushing, and that the goods there be delivered to Mr. Arthur Swaine, who should receive the freight and afterwards deliver the general parcels to the owners or to whom the owners here should consign them. The Company's parcels to be delivered to Mr. John D. Clark, whom upon the recommendation of Alderman Johnson and Mr. Chamberlain they did choose to be their factor. [Economic History of Virginia, vol. i, page 266, by Philip Alexander Bruce.]

The Virginia Company attempted to control the quantity produced by imposing taxes and restrictions upon sales of tobacco that the charter of the Company did not warrant, which impelled the planters to look to Holland and elsewhere, and they began to deal direct with the jobber or foreign merchant. The law which required all tobacco to be shipped to England, no matter what its ultimate destination, and to be marketed through the factor of the Virginia Company, was resisted by a scheme of open evasion which the home government designated as smuggling, and which the colonists denominated free trade. This resulted in still further stimulating production and almost ruined the trade.

To add to the difficulties, the Holland government, as soon as the trade was well established, began to collect imposts on its own account. This added greatly to the burdens of the English factors and to still further increase their difficulties, the Dutch shipowners, reaching out for part of the trade, openly assisted the Virginia planters in the evasion of the English impost. As a consequence the tobacco trade ceased to be a law-abiding commerce. The evader of tax regulations was the only successful trader. The effect of this was to transfer to the Chesapeake Bay country the control of the tobacco trade, and the merchant who desired to participate in the same must be on the ground, or be outbid by his rivals. It must not be assumed that the Dutch or the Dutch-English were the only tax evaders, as the English merchants, not to be outdone, on their own account evaded the impost whenever it was possible to do so, which was of course doing the very thing concerning which they so loudly complained against the Dutch sea captains, all of which gave plentiful reason why the English merchant must be a resident of Virginia. Thomas Pearsall, the son of Edmund, was in Virginia for this purpose where he had gone almost immediately after the loss of the tobacco monopoly, and located in what is now the Isle of Wight County.

This open free trade in tobacco decreased the receipts of the royal treasury so that it called for interference by Government in the affairs of the colony. Consequently in 1624, the colony was taken away from the Second Virginia Corporation, but they continued to have the exclusive monopoly of tobacco from Virginia and the Summer Isles. As soon as a rumor of this intention reached the colony, its earnest representations caused an abandonment of the monopoly part of the scheme, whereby Virginia became a self-governing royal colony, charged with the duty of making large contributions to the royal treasury, whereas it was without adequate means to enforce the collection of the imposts, hence it became the paradise of the so-called free trader. The officers of Virginia seem to have been honest in their efforts to enforce the collection of the impost taxes, but in a country so broken up with deep rivers and having many good harbors, all protected by the great hardwood forest of the Chesapeake country, it was impossible for the inadequate force of customs officers of Virginia to cover the territory assigned to them. Moreover, from the beginning it was the fashion to gather the free cargoes on the Delaware River front of the Delaware peninsula. The portage between the navigable waters was very short, so that it was almost as convenient to load on the Delaware as on the Chesapeake.

Thomas Pearsall, son of Edmund Pearsall was one of the most persistent and successful of these free traders. In fact he became a leader among the great

Dutch-English merchants who at this time came to the Virginia country. He early made alliances with the Dutch governors of New Netherlands, among whom we particularly notice Adrien Joris, Governor in 1623-1624, who personally came over to the South or Delaware River and took part in the tobacco trade. In fact he seems to have been the earliest of the Dutch traders. It is evident that he had close and continued dealings with Thomas Pearsall, as some fifteen years later, when the sons of Thomas Pearsall located on Long Island, New York, they obtained their land holdings partly in the name of the son of Governor Joris, for the reason that being Englishmen they did not want to swear allegiance to the Holland government, and therefore they had to make their investments in the names of those whom they knew they could trust.

Thus began one of the most profitable seasons of Virginia tobacco trade, but in this Edmund Pearsall had no interest whatsoever, neither did his son Robert Pearsall, nor his older son Edmond Peshall. The old tobacco business came to an end simply because it ceased to exist in any of the forms in which Edmond Pearsall had previously had connection with it, and he did not go along with the new conditions which now controlled this trade, even though it was the direct successor of the original monopoly. Up to this time there had been a regular stream of money coming in from the tobacco concession, but its repeal stopped this source of income for Edmond Pearsall and it would have been well for him could he have been content to have retired, at his advanced age, to enjoy his large and rich estate. But he persisted in going into one thing after another, just as if he were a young man with lots of energy, whereas his infirmities made him dependent on the help of others to such an extent as to make him utterly unfitted for business. It must be remembered that it was now 1624 and Edmond Pearsall was between ninety-three and ninety-five years of age.

This history has carefully followed the life of this great merchant for practically each year of his remarkable career, first as a merchant of the Staple of London, and afterwards as a grocer and citizen of London, and then as the concessioner of the tobacco monopoly. It has traced his rise in fortune until he had amassed one of the largest moneyed estates of his time and was possessed of a good size landed estate as well. Now we come to a swift period of disaster. No one seems to know exactly how it happened, nor can we say except that through our most careful and painstaking searching into the matter, all that we have ever been able to gather definitely upon the subject is that there is a uniformity of tradition among the older merchants of London, and the historians of England, that Edmond Pearsall plunged into some gigantic speculation which swept away his fortune as quickly as the sunshine of spring melts away the winter's snow. This much is certain, that whereas in 1624 he was ranked among the richest men of England, according to the size of his personal fortune, yet in 1626 he was a decayed suitor to the Grocers Guild for the moneys he had loaned that company. For its records disclose that:—At a Court held July 19th, 1626:—It is Ordered that Mr. Wardens shall make payment unto Mr. Edmund Peshall decayed upon his humble suite made to this Corte all such somes of money as he hath lent to this Company either for provision of Corne or Plantation in Ireland. This brief record tells the story of this disaster with a directness that leaves no possible loop-

hole for mitigation, abatement or diminution. In the English language of that time a decayed person is one who has lost his fortune and property of every kind. The receipt of the moneys from the Grocers Guild only aggravated the matter as, the family having paid his old debts, he used these new funds to plunge into new ventures which landed him deeper than ever in debt. In less than a year afterwards he was back again to the Grocers Guild, only this time he came as one who asks assistance against the trials incident to poverty. It appears also that at this time he was in Fleet prison as an insolvent debtor, at the suit of Sir Humphrey Styles and his wife, the daughter and heir of Robert Peshall, his brother, who had taken advantage of this opportunity to get rid of so troublesome a person. The family would again have been glad to help Edmond Pearsall out of this serious difficulty but the old lion would not yield an inch; he was ready and anxious, as he had been all his lifetime, to take whatever was coming to him, whether good or ill, and to return many fold the injury done him; while for a kindness he knew no bounds to his generosity. And none had been greater recipients of his bounty than his brother Robert Peshall and his daughter Elizabeth, now the wife of Sir Humphrey Styles.

In 1622 Robert Peshall, the brother of Edmond Pearsall, had died, having first made his last will and testament, wherein he said that he had before this time conveyed the Priory of Ulscroft in the County of Leicester and other lands, meaning thereby all the other lands belonging to Edmond Pearsall, the title to which was in his, Robert Peshall's name, to Sir John Levenson, Knight, and to Richard Broome Esq., for certain uses relating to the heirs of his daughter Elizabeth, then the widow of Robert Bosville, deceased. This deed was dated 2 April, 12 James I. (1615) at the very time when he was engaged in settling his accounts with his brother Edmond Pearsall, and shows clearly why he was so anxious to have the statute staple from his brother, although no money was due from Edmond to Robert. The will of the latter makes this statute staple appear as really being a debt due from Edmond Pearsall to the said Robert Peshall, for it also says that he gives to his brother Edmund Peshall the sum of one hundred pounds in money to be allowed him upon the payment of the money which he oweth me. This was an awful blow to Edmond Pearsall, hurting him more than the loss of the property, that his brother should have been guilty of such perfidy towards him after the bountiful manner in which Edmond had treated him and his daughter. It had never once entered the mind of Edmond Pearsall that his brother, Robert Peshall, would betray his trust and show himself faithless. Edmond Pearsall began proceedings to recover his property in which he denied that the £100 left him for a legacy was to be paid out of the money he owed Robert Peshall, as neither did he, Edmond, owe Robert any moneys at all but on the contrary, said Robert was indebted to Edmond at the time of his death. [Chancery Proceedings, Charles.I, Bundle 53, No. 48; Bundle 5, No. 37.] To recover one's property is more than difficult where the trustee is dead who held under absolute deeds. [Chancery Proceedings, Bundle 53, No. 48; Bundle 65, No. 37.] Edmond Pearsall further said that Robert Peshall died possessed of an estate worth for the personalty £10000 at least and was seized of lands of the value of only £1000, all of which has come into the hands of Sir Humphrey



Styles and his wife Elizabeth, daughter of said Robert Peashall. Which will enable the reader to determine the portion of Robert Peshall's estate which was represented by the lands of Edmond Pearsall. [Chancery Proceedings, Bundle 53, No. 48; Bundle 5, No. 37.] In the meantime Elizabeth Bosville, widow, married Sir Humphrey Styles, who was afterwards Cup Bearer to King Charles I, and the old statute staple for £620 was resurrected and judgment obtained thereon for the amount thereof with interest, the execution on which came along just as the family of Edmond Pearsall had straightened out his old financial difficulties. The family wanted to pay this debt, bad as it was, and which was comparatively small, but Edmond Pearsall would not permit them to do so as that would be acknowledging the untruthful claims made by the heir of Robert Peshall and which untruth Robert Peshall had himself connived at and made possible. As to the Priory of Olvescroft the answer of the Styles shows that even they were forced to concede that at least part of the purchase money had been paid by Edmond Pearsall. It was indeed a sad ending to all the good Edmond Pearsall had done for his brother and his niece, but so far as the suffering and imprisonment was concerned this came from the strong character of the old merchant who had enjoyed the confidence of all of England from the King down to the smallest landed proprietor who lived way up in the interior counties of England and who produced part of the staple of England. There was no moving Edmond Pearsall from his determination to see the thing through to the bitter end. Therefore he went to jail as an insolvent debtor. In the hazardous ventures engaged in by the members of the Grocers Guild the man of means of today might tomorrow by the capture or destruction of his vessels or by some adverse turn of the markets or by the unfortunate ending of some business undertaking, be reduced to the direst poverty. To meet this, one of the functions of the Guild was, by a system of pensions, to insure each other mutually against the personal ills incident to loss of property. Hence we find on the records of that company the following petition:—At a Court held May 22nd, 1627:—This day uppon the humble suite and petition of Mr. Edmund Peshall sometymes one of the Worshippfull Assistants of this Company and nowe a poore & miserable prisoner in the Ffleete as by his petition is sett forth and testified to be true by Mr. Warden Smith is graunted unto hime a yearely pencon of Twenty pounds per annum of the goods of this howse to be payd hime by Mr. Rentor of this Company whereof he is to receive nowe at Midsomer next to releive his present necessities lbs. 10:—and the nexte payment to be at Or Ladday next ensuinge and soe to be payd unto hime afterwards quarterlie duringe the pleasure of the Corte.

At a Court held June 22nd, 1627:—This day uppon the humble suit of Mr. Edmund Peshall a benevolence of lbs. 10: of the goods of this house is granted by this Corte to be payd him by Mr. Rentor of this Company to supply him in his great extremities and want wch were made manifest to this Corte and also yt it is agreed by this Corte that the lbs. 20: per annum graunted him the last Corte and the payment of lbs. 10: therefore afforehand as is menconed in the order of the said Cort shall stande and be paid him accordingly.

It is not pleasant to think of our ancestor as having been incarcerated in the terrible Fleet Prison to which Charles Dickens has given so black a name in his

writings. And, after reading the history of this prison, one must admit that his picture is no darker than the sufferings and surroundings of the most of the poor prisoners who were confined in this celebrated gaol. But there were well known exceptions in a certain class of prisoners who really had no cause to complain of their sufferings in this place. Before considering the experiences of these specially preferred prisoners in Fleet Prison it may be well to say that in our day many instances are occurring and have occurred similar to that of Edmond Pearsall, senior, and in such cases the practice is to have an order made by the court of Chancery appointing a committee, trustee or receiver to manage the person, estate, and personal affairs of the party in such a manner as not only to protect the unfortunate one from the rapacity of his creditors, but to prevent him from incurring new indebtedness of any kind without the permission of the court. In the time of Edmund Pearsall, senior, no such practice prevailed, so the only way was to permit him to be committed to the debtor's side of the Fleet Prison. This prison not only had a debtor's side but it was also the special gaol for the incarceration of prisoners committed by the notorious political court of Star Chamber. As to this we shall speak again when we tell the story of Edmund, Junior, who also died in this prison, where he had been committed for contempt of the court of Star Chamber. For it appears that Sir Humphrey Styles, having succeeded in getting Edmond Pearsall safely lodged in the Fleet, had occasion to use his influence with the Court of Star Chamber to secure the commitment of Edmund Peshall, the son of Edmond Pearsall, to the same jail, where he died. Robert Pearsall, the oldest son, had become involved in his father's financial disaster and therefore some way could have been found to have likewise placed him in the debtors jail. But Robert Pearsall, through his wife's people, had powerful friends and he was unmolested. At this time Thomas Pearsall was in Virginia.

It must not be understood that Edmond Pearsall was at all times confined to the Fleet and compelled to pass his days within its bounds, for the wardens charge for a lawful license to go abroad into the City of London or elsewhere within the British Isles was 20d per day; hence it was possible for an inmate of the Fleet Prison to spend practically all his time outside of the bounds of the prison and yet be protected from the rapacious efforts of his creditors to collect the several sums of money which the debtor owed to them. [In *Jail* with Charles Dickens, by Alfred Trumble, New York, 1896.] In fact if one had the means whereby to satisfy the keepers he could enjoy almost perfect freedom while a prisoner in the Fleet Prison, provided he was there as an insolvent debtor, for of course this freedom from restraint did not apply to those who were prisoners committed by the Court of Star Chamber. That Edmond Pearsall enjoyed the fullest liberty and the utmost of the privileges of the prison is shown by the fact that rumors began to be circulated that he really was concealing his property and was not an insolvent debtor. The matter was quickly brought to the attention of the Grocers Guild whose action in the premises is recorded on their minutes as follows:—

At a Court held July 18th, 1627:—Whereas Mr. Edmund Peshall hath an yearly allowance of £20; of the goods of the house during the pleasure of this Corte beinge informed that he receiveth the benefitt and profitts of lands to his

owne use of the valewe of £500: per annum At least, itt is therefore ordered that his sayd yearly allowance shall cease untill this Corte shall give further order therein. The matter of the pension was under consideration for some time, after which it was resolved by the Grocers Guild to continue the payment of the same to Edmond Pearsall as is disclosed by the following record of the society's action:—

At a Court held March 13th, 1628:—This day Mr. Edmund Peshall preferred his humble suite and peticon to this Corte for the continuance of a yearly pencon heretofore graunted hime by this Company for the supplie of his extreame necessities beinge mainfested to be true by Mr. Bostocke Scrivener who beinge presente in Corte was requested to give true informacon whether the sayd Mr. Peshall hath any estate or means coming to hime by the yere (the Corte havinge beinge informed of an estate he hath) he made answeare that to his knowledge this estate (beinge known to noe man better) that he hath not any means in the world but what he receiveth from this Company whereuppon the Cort agreed and ordered that he shall have his former yerely pencon continued unto hime to be payd to hym quarterly and that he shall have payd hime the arrerages being £1, 15: the sayd pencon to continue unto him dureing the pleasure of the Corte.

It was shortly after this that the health of Edmond Pearsall failed so completely that he was confined to his room and later to his bed in the Fleet Prison where he died in April, 1629, having first made his will on the preceding twenty-sixth day of March. His son Edmund Junior, was at this time a political prisoner in the same prison, dying on the day that his father made his will as aforesaid. On this occasion, the several signatures to Edmond senior's will shows that the whole family, both of Edmond senior and junior, were gathered in the prison.

By the death of Edmond Pearsall, the last witness expired who could challenge the title of Sir Humphrey Styles and his wife to the lands which were really the property of Edmund Pearsall, but the latter nevertheless, directed in his will that his executors should continue the fight.

After all, could any one have asked a more fitting and a more glorious ending to the life of this old merchant prince, than that under these circumstances he died in the Fleet prison in the City of London. For seventy-five years he had been in business in this City as a merchant of the staple and as a member of the Grocers Guild. At the end, he enjoyed universal esteem, not only in his own City, but in all England as well as all over the known world. His life had been one of unsullied truth, and spotless integrity, and he was applauded and acclaimed as being of reputable character. It is to his everlasting credit and honor that he suffered the indignities and degradation of imprisonment rather than compromise with untruth, or condone with dishonesty, or to pardon a wrong the act of forgiving which involved a confession of moral turpitude and depravity so utterly at variance with his whole lifetime history and conduct. While he was no doubt filled with righteous wrath and scornful indignation, yet he found comfort in the thought that the earth is the Lord's and the fulness thereof and they that dwell therein, for he hath founded it upon the seas and established it upon the floods, and it was sufficient to him that his most gracious Lord had vouchsafed unto his servant that he was the means to spread the knowledge of God's word to the

uttermost parts of the earth, and to open distant lands which were a wilderness for a dwelling place for his people.

As they buried Edmond Pearsall they asked themselves the old, old question, Who shall ascend unto the hill of the Lord and who shall stand in his holy place? And they said with the Psalmist:—He that hath clean hands and a pure heart; who hath not lifted up his soul to vanity, nor sworn deceitfully. He shall receive the blessing from the Lord and righteousness from the God of his salvation.

The Will of Edmond Peshall appears in the Prerogative Court of Chancery at Somerset House, London, England, and reads as follows:—In the name of God Amen. The six and twentieth day of March in the fourth year of the reign of our sovereign Lord Charles, by the grace of God, King of England, Scotland, France and Ireland, defender of the faith &c And in the year of our Lord God one thousand six hundred and twenty nine. I Edmond Peshall of London Gent (though sick in body yet of a perfect and disposing memory thanks be to God) considering the frailty of this transitory life and how necessary it is for every Xtian to be in continual readiness where so ever the good pleasure of the Almighty God shall be to call us from this transitory world do make ordain, declare and publish this my last will and testament in manner and form following viz. First I commend my soul into the hands of the Almighty Holy Blessed and undivided Trinity and my body to the earth to be interred in Christian burial where it shall seem good to my executors hereafter named. And as touching my worldly estate and goods I leave them to be distributed as followeth And whereas there are several suites between me and others in his majesties High Court of Chancery and in several other his Majesties Courts of Justice within this his Kingdom and for divers sums of money which are due and accruing unto me upon account, my will and meaning is my executors shall prosecute and defend the same suites to their uttermost and whatsoever shall be recovered upon or by reason of the same suites and every of them I wish that the same, as well lands as moneys, shall be equally divided between my three sons Robert, Edmond and Thomas and my daughter Mary, the said lands to be sold according to the discretion of my executors and the monies hereupon arising to be divided as aforesaid as also all other money whatsoever due and payable to me. And also such household stuff, plate and other things whatsoever as I shall die possess of to be received by my executors and to be equally divided amongst my said four children as aforesaid. Always provided that my said executors shall be first allowed and deducted all such costs and charges as they shall be at, sustain or undergo for or by reason of the same suites or any of them or any other charge or trouble they shall be put unto by any act or thing done by me whatsoever. And provided also that before any such division shall be made my said executors shall out of the profits of such lands and out of such moneys as they shall recover and receive pay all such debts as are justly due and owing either by me, or by my said son Robert, to such person and persons to whom the same are due and owing, and as such legacies as are here-

inafter bequeathed by me I bequeath unto Anne Grobham for her pains and care taken with me one black gown cloth and twenty shillings in money to be given her against my funeral and twenty shillings to be paid her by my executors out of the first moneys they shall recover and receive. Item I give unto Ellen Johnston to buy him either a pair of gloves or a small ring which shall best please him. And my will and meaning is that if any my said children die before such time as they shall have received all or any part of the portions intended unto them by this will that then the same so remaining unsatisfied shall be equally divided amongst my said children surviving. And further I do hereby make, ordain and constitute my well-beloved son Thomas Peshall, and my loving friend Christopher Ayres of London, Gent, executors of this my last will and testament in trust for the use of him, the said Thomas Peshall and my other children, giving and allowing unto the said Thomas Peshall my son fifty pounds more over and above the portion herein by me intended to him for the pains that he shall undertake herein, and to my other executor Christopher Ayres the sum of One hundred pounds for the pains and care that he shall take herein. The said several sums of one hundred and fifty pounds to be paid unto my said executors respectively according as the same is hereby bequeathed unto them and with convenience as moneys shall come into their hands; and finally I do hereby renounce, frustrate, annihilate and utterly make void all former and other wills and testaments heretofore by me made and do hereby pronounce, declare and establish this only to be my last will and testament. In Witness whereof I have hereunto put my hand and seal the day and year aforesaid.—The mark of Edmond Peshall—Witnessed the same day by John Hill, Richard Wiseman, John Line, junr., Edmund Peshall and Mary Peshall. Proved April 10, 1629. The record in the Probate Act Book of the Prerogative Court of Chancery, Somerset House, London, under the date of April 10th 1629 reads as follows;—Edmundus Peshall. Decimo die probatum fuit testimonium Edmundi Peshall nuy deceder in le flete intra paroch Sancte Bridgitte in flete Streete London hewtis & Juramentis Thomce Peshall filii ded Iefo et Christoferi Ayres de bene esse [copy not clear]. London, Johis. (Translation:—Edmundus Peshall: On the tenth day (of April) was proven the testament of Edmond Peshall, lately deceased in the Fleet, within the Parish of St Bridget, in Fleet Street, London. Produced and sworn to by Thomas Peshall son of the deceased and Christopher Ayres Executors. and ordered de bene esse jurat.

Both the Randolph and Bathurst families invested heavily with Edmond Pearsall in the tobacco monopoly and the large profits they received formed the basis for the marked rise in the standing of these families at this period.

## SECTION 2.

Ancestry of MARIA BATHURST. The family take their name from Bathurst in county Sussex. In the time of Edward IV, Lawrence Bathurst settled at Cranbrook, county Kent, and had an only son Lawrence of Canterbury and Cranhook, who was father of another Lawrence of Canterbury, Cranhook and Staplehurst, county Kent, who married a daughter of Robert Chapman, Esq., and had Edward of Staplehurst, living 1550; Robert of Horsmonden of co. Kent, and John of Staplehurst.

The eldest son Edward Bathurst was father of Launcelot Bathurst an alderman of London, born 1529, who married Judith, daughter of Bernard Randolph, Esq., of London and of Wardis, Sussex. He was common sergeant of London. The Randolphs became a very prominent family in Virginia. Launcelot Bathurst, in the beginning of Elizabeth's reign, was possessed of the manor of Franks in Kent. Launcelot Bathurst was elected Lord Mayor of London November 27, 1593. Children of Launcelot Bathurst and Judith Randolph:—

1. Randolph Bathurst, of Franks Esq., who married Katharine, daughter of Richard Argall.
2. George Bathurst, of the Inner Temple, who married Elizabeth Villers of Hothorp, Northamptonshire. His daughter, Helena, married John Pearsall of Hallen als Hawne in County Worcester. [Chapter 18, Section 8, Division D.]
3. Henry Bathurst.
4. Launcelot Bathurst.
5. Edward Bathurst.
6. Maria Bathurst, who married Edmund Pearsall.

In later years the descendants of George Bathurst rose to great eminence in England. In fact all of his children occupied high places in English history, including Ralph who was the famous Dean of Bath and Wells and President of Trinity College, Oxford, and F. R. S., and Sir Benjamin who lived at Seville and married Frances, daughter of Sir Allen Apsley, who in the reign of Charles II was elected governor of the Royal African Company, and in 1688-1689 was Governor of the East India Company. He was afterwards treasurer of the household of Princess Anne of Denmark and on her accession to the throne, Sir Benjamin Bathurst was constituted her majesty's cofferer.

His eldest son Allen Bathurst was created, August 27, 1772, Earl Bathurst, of Bathurst Co. Sussex. He married Catharine, daughter and heiress of Sir Peter Apsley, co. Sussex. Their son Henry was an eminent lawyer who was elevated to the peerage, as Baron Apsley of Apsley, Co. Sussex, upon being constituted Lord High Chancellor of Great Britain. He married Tryphena, daughter of Thomas Seawan, Esq. of Maidwell. Their son Henry the third Earl, in 1807, became one of the tellers of the Exchequer and clerk of the Crown. He was president of the Board of Trade from 1807 to 1812; Secretary of War and Colonies and Secretary of Foreign Affairs, from 1812 to 1827, and President of the Council from 1828 to 1830, in the Duke of Wellington Administration. In his honor, Bathurst County was named in New South Wales; also Bathurst Island, lying off North Australia; Bathurst, the principal settlement on the Gambia and Bathurst District in upper Canada; and also an island in the Arctic Ocean.

The Bathurst Family are inseparably connected with Franks in Kent. The Archaeological Society of Kent in 1920 visited this old mansion. The account of this visit reads that at Franks the party were received by Lord Bathurst. Mr. Vallance described the building, which he pointed out was entirely Elizabethan, the walls being of brick, with stone dressing, on a base of flints backed by chalk. The former mediaeval house, he was told, stood on the opposite side of the river Darenth, which runs past the front of the house. Franks was very complete in

plan. Roughly, it was in quadrangle form, and it was so far the product of the Renaissance that it was quite symmetrical, every feature on one side being balanced by a similar feature on the other side. Continuing his description inside the house, Mr. Vallance pointed out that as it belonged to the post mediaeval period, its great hall was comparatively small and did not extend up to the roof. One very interesting feature differentiating the hall from any other he knew was the gallery over the screens. The front of the gallery was very high, with a lattice work which went right up to the ceiling. The present ceiling was not original, but has a beautiful reproduction of the old one.

There was a Robert Bathurst of Horsmandine, County Kent, and of Lechlade, County Gloucester, who married Elizabeth Waller, daughter of Robert Waller, Esq., and widow of Sir John Lawrence, Lord Mayor of London. His second son, Edward Bathurst, born 1615, was created a baronet Dec. 4, 1643, and died 1647. His son, Launcelot Bathurst, born 1646, emigrated to Virginia before 1680 and has many descendants through his daughters, Elizabeth, Mary and Susanna. [Virginia Historical Magazine, vol. 23, page 294.] He is mentioned in the Visitation of Gloucestershire, in England, of 1682 as Launcelot Bathurst of Virginia, married there and living at 36, in 1682. [William and Mary Quarterly, volume 8, page 98.]

#### THE RANDOLPHS

Bernard Randolph Esq. of London and Sussex, England, is said to have been brother or cousin to Robert Randolph of Sussex, gentleman, who married Rose Roberts, daughter of Thomas Roberts of Hawkurst, Kent. Child:—

1. William Randolph, born 1572; died 1660, settled at Little Haughton, Northamptonshire. Married first, Elizabeth Smith, daughter of Thomas Smith of Newman, gent. Married second, Dorothy Lane, daughter of Richard Lane of Courtenhall and widow of Thomas West of Courtenhall, gent.

Children of first marriage:—

1. Thomas Randolph, born June 15, 1605; died March, 1634.
2. William Randolph, born 1607; married as her third husband, Sarah Ladbrook of Abbington, Warwickshire. Children:—
  1. John Randolph.
  2. Samuel Randolph.
  3. Sarah Randolph.
3. Robert Randolph, B. A., Christ Church, Oxford; died June 7, 1671.
4. Elizabeth Randolph.

Children of second marriage:—

5. John Randolph of Towcester, married Dorothy Atterbury of Great Haughton. Child:—
  1. William Randolph.
6. Richard Randolph, born February 21, 1621; died Dublin, Ireland, 1671. Married Elizabeth Ryland; resided Morton Hall, Warwickshire. Children:—
  1. Richard Randolph.

2. William Randolph, born 1651; died April 11, 1671; emigrated to Virginia 1660, and succeeded his uncle Henry Randolph as Clerk of Henrico County, Virginia. Married Mary Isham of Bermuda Hundred, Virginia.
3. Thomas Randolph.
4. John Randolph.
5. Dorothy Randolph.
6. Mary Randolph.
7. Margaret Randolph.
7. Henry Randolph, born 1623; went to Virginia 1643, and remained there 27 years. He was clerk of Henrico County 1643-1669 and clerk of the Virginia House of Burgesses from 1660 to his death, in 1673. He married Judith Soane, daughter of Henry Soane, speaker of the House of Burgesses.
8. Anne Randolph, died young.
9. Margaret Randolph.
10. George Randolph, born 1627; died 1645.
11. Judith Randolph, born 1638.

[Harl. MSS., Visitations Northamptonshire.]

#### SECTION 3, DIVISION A.

THOMAS PERSHALL, son of Richard, Chapter 25, Section 1, was born circa 1535; buried in Eccleshall Church, November 24, 1608; married Jane or Joanna, relict of Antone Windsor, daughter of Edmund Phetiplace of Blessilis Lee in Berks, by Margaret, a daughter of John, Lord Mordaunt of Turvey, by Elizabeth, daughter and heir of H. Vere of Great Addington, Northampton. She died and was buried December 10, 1604, in Eccleshall Church. Children:—

1. Robert Pershall, who died young and unmarried.
2. John Pershall, born February 22, 1562. Chapter 26, Section 3, Division B.
3. Thomas Pershall, born January 3, 1556.

Sheriff, November 12, 1608, Thomas Persall, Esq. (Peshall of Horsley.) [Staff Hist. Col., vol. 1912, page 286.]

The Records of Gray's Inn show that he was admitted to that body as a student in 1555, his name being recorded as Thomas Persall, of Horsley; ancient 26 January, 1568.

At Gray's Inn the society consisted of those who according to their standing of seniority were ranked as follows: Benchers, Ancients, Barristers and Students. A barrister in modern terms would be a lawyer, but in England they are those who have the right to plead in the Superior Courts. The ancients were the oldest barristers; while the benchers were those of the senior members who were entrusted with the government of the society. They had the privilege of pleading within the bar of the court, hence they are sometimes called inner benchers.

Extracts from the Note Book of George Skipp, of the Upper Hall, Ledbury, Herefordshire. Mem. I, George Skippe was admitted to the Soc. of Gray's Inn, in the year 1656, on the 10th of October, and was called to the Barr there in 1666, and I went to reside in Ball. College February 22, 1651.—Richard Willason, Esq. dyed 25th of Feb. 1574; his ex'ors were Sir Edward Cowper, clerke, Alex Denton, Esq., and Ann his wife, which Ann his wife dyed 17 Jan. 1575; her ex'ors

were Theo. Ffettiplace, Thomas Persall, and Henry Cassy, Esq. [H. & G. vol. vii, page 420.]

The Dentons were an old Shropshire family. In days gone by, a hermit dwelt amidst the solitudes of the Wrekin, or the Forest of Mount Gilbert, and King Henry III., by his patent of September 17, 1267, granted to Nicholas de Denton, Heremite of Mounte Gilbert, six quarters of corn; to be paid him by the sheriff of Shropshire, out of the issues of Pendlestone Mill, in order, as it

was expressed, to give the Hermit greater leisure for holy exercises, and to support him during his life, so long as he shall be a Heremite on the aforesaid mountain. The connection between the Skippis and the Willasons and the correction of the above entry may be gathered from the following bit of pedigree.—[Anderson's Shropshire History, page 120.]

John Willason of Sugnal=Alyce, daughter of Skipp of Norfolk

Richard Willason, died 25 Feb. 1574;=Ann, dau. of William Eltan of Ledbury bur. at Madley

Ann Willison, dau. & coheir.=Alexander Denton of Hillesdon, co. Bucks.

Their monument is in Hereford Cathedral. He died in 1576; she in 1566, in the 18th year of her age. Here we have a very interesting association of the names of Denton and Persall, which names also appear, as we shall pres-

ently see, in the Hempstead Records, Long Island, New Netherlands, in America. It is probable that there was a family relationship running through all the parties named in the above records including their solicitors.

There is no publication which is consulted by genealogists more frequently than the Visitations, specially those that have been published by the Harleian Society. It will therefore be of more than family interest to learn how the Marshal proceeded in obtaining his information, specially as to those who refused the burdens of bearing arms; as to these the Marshal returns:—The names of those that in the time of this visitation (A. D. 1583) have made no proof of their gentry, bearing no arms; and yet before time had called and written themselves gentlemen, and were therefore disclaimed in the chief places of the hundred where they dwell. The names being written on a sheet of paper with fayer great letters was carried by the bailiff of the hundred and one of the herald's men to the chief town of that hundred which is the chief place thereof. The Herald's man read the names (after cry made by the bayleg and the people gathered) and then pronounced openly by the said baylege every man's name severally contained in said bill. That done the balie set the said bill in the chiefest place of the said town. Eccleshall, Hawne.

Franciscus Rosse [Herald]	pounds	Lemus Law	Light horsemen
Ara Teris.....	30	1	1
Thomas Pershall in tem.....	20	1	1
Edward Barbour " " .....	10		2
Thomas Skinnise.....	10		2

[Staff. Hist. Col. vol. 3, part 2, page 10.]

The next procedure seems to have been a summons to appear before the marshal of the College of Heraldry; hence the records disclose a list of the names of the nobility of the County of Stafford, 1583, being a list of those summoned by warrant to appear before Glover Somerset and record their descent and arms. To a large proportion of the names in this list a trick of the family arms is attached, among the rest summoned in the Hundred de Pirehill, Thomas Peyshall de Horseley—a Hors de Pays Rob'tus Payshall de Horseley—gen. pater junior. Arms argent a cross forme flory sable, on a canton gules, wolfshead erased of the first. Which is very interesting as it indicates that the oldest son of Thomas was Robert, and that at this time he was a separate landowner and was liable for military service. He predeceased his father and died unmarried and without issue.



To return to the Marshal's summons, of course the parties summoned never did appear, hence the Marshal would make up a pedigree as nearly as he could and assessed the delinquent with the penalty for non-performance of this duty. This accounts for the many errors that appear in the records of the Visitations. It also disclosed that at this time all the brothers of Thomas had removed from Staffordshire, Robert going to Leicestershire, and Edmund and Humphrey to London.

Thomas Pershall deposited some of his surplus money with his brother Edmond Pearsall, Merchant of the Staple of London, whereby he received large accretions to his wealth, which Thomas Pershall invested in lands, tenements and hereditaments in Staffordshire as is disclosed by the following:—On the Octaves of St. Michael, 40 Elizabeth, 1598, a fine Between Thomas Peshall, armiger, complainant and Thomas Stacy deforciant of a messuage, a garden, an orchard, 40 acres of land, 10 acres of meadow, 20 acres of pasture, 6 acres of wood, and common of pasture for all kinds of cattle in Bishops Offley, Brockton, Slynn and Eccleshall. [Staff. Hist. Col. vol. 16, page 182.]

On the Octaves of St. Michael, 43 Elizabeth, 1601, Between Thomas Peshall, armiger, complainant and Walter Harcourt, knight, and Robert Harcourt son and heir apparent of the said Walter deforciants of 3 messuages, a cottage, 4 gardens, 40 acres of land, 20 acres of meadow, 40 acres of pasture for all beasts in Croxton, Slyndon, i.e. Slin, Eccleshall and Brockford. [*Ibid.*, vol. 16, page 212.]

Final Concords, Temp. James I. On the Octaves of St. Hilary 1 Jas. I (1603) Between Thomas Peshall, armiger, complainant and John Gaywood gentleman deforciant of a messuage, an orchard, 3 acres of land, 20 acres of meadow, 30 acres of pasture, 4 acres of wood, in Little Sugnell and Dorslowe. 10 June, 1599. Thomas Pearshall of Horseley in co. Stafford, Esq. complainant against John Biddell in Eccleshall in Co. Stafford. [*Ibid.*, vol. 18, page 32. Chancery Proceedings, series 11, 53.]

Thomas Pershall Esquire of Horsley in the County of Stafford, was one of the complainants in the bill in equity filed June 15, 1602 against Francis Cheyney esquire one of the executors of William Dormer deceased. [Chancery proceedings, Queen Elizabeth, 1558 to 1603, Bundle 17, No. 27.]

Final Concords. On the Octaves of St. Michael, 26 Elizabeth. Between Thomas Pershall, armiger, complainant and Robert Harecourt, armiger, John Cooke, otherwise Harcourt, gentleman, Margaret his wife, Robert Cooke, otherwise Harecourt, gentleman, deforciants of the manor of Doreslowe, otherwise Dorreslowe, otherwise Dorseley and of 3 messuages, 70 acres of land, 20 acres of meadow, 40 acres of pasture, 100 acres of furze and heath, 10s. rent in Durslowe, otherwise Doreslowe, Ilsall, Sugnull, Little Croston and Eccleshall. The deforciants remitted all rights to Thomas and his heirs for which Thomas gave them 80 pounds. [Staff. Hist. Col. vol. 15, page 158.]

Inquisition held at Eccleshall, co. Stafford, 10 August, 7 James I. (1609) to inquire after the death of Thomas Peyshall, Esq. The jurors say he held the Manors of Bishops Offley, Sugnull and Apsley with appurtenances in co. Staff. and the Manor or grange of Horseley there, the farm of Dearnstowe and lands in Slynn called Slynn More, in High Offley, Eccleshall, Haughton, co. Staff. in Newport, Chetwind, Drayton, Blechley, Cheswardine, Norton, Egmond, Co. Salop,

half the Manor of Wistaston, co. Chester, and the moiety of that advowson, the capital messuage called Checkley and lands in Stapleford, co. Chester, and in Coton and Malpas, Doblendache, Baberhill, Droitwich, co. Chester, the moiety of the Manor of Lea, co. Derby, one part of the Manor of Ashoover, and a messuage called Eddlestowe, co. Derby (details of lands aforesaid, etc., with tenures are given). So seized by Indenture dated 30 March, 38 Elizabeth (1597), the said Thomas Peshall granted to feoffees the aforesaid premises in trust for his son and heir apparent John and Anne wife of John in tail male; in default of such issue to John's brother Thomas Peishall, to Jonas Peishall, son of James Peishall, brother of Thomas, decd., to Robert Peishall, brother of Thomas, decd., to Edmund Peishall the eldest brother of Thomas decd., to William Peishall eldest son of a certain Ralph Peishall, to Charles Peshall brother of said William, in tail male in default to the right heirs of the said Thomas.

Said Thomas died 23 November last past at Horseley co. Stafford and John his son and heir is aged 30 years and more; Thomas Peishall junior died in the lifetime of his father Thomas without heirs of his body and Ann wife of John survives. [Chancery Inquisition P. M. Series II, vol. 319, No. 186.]

A further inquisition of the Court of Wards reads as follows: 'Inquisition taken at Malbann, co. Chester, 21 September, 19 James I. to inquire after the death of Thomas Peshall, Esquire, deceased. The jurors say he was seized of the advowson of the Manor of Wistaston and the moiety of the advowson of that church and a capital messuage called Checkley Hall in Checkley and of lands and tenements there and in Stapleford, Cotton Edmunds, Malpas, Hanton, and Droitwich, and so being seized died on 23 November 7 James I.' and Sir John Peshall, baronet, is his son and next heir and was then aged 30 years and more. [Inquisition Post Mortem Court of Wards, file 65, No. 47. Hist. Coll. Staff. vol. 1914, page 49.]

When the English Church was established it introduced into England a new crime called recusancy, or the obstinate refusal of a person to attend divine service in the Angelican Church, or to acknowledge the ecclesiastical supremacy of the Crown.

In 1569 the Pope had published a bull declaring Queen Elizabeth guilty of heresy and absolving her subjects from their allegiance. The English Queen and her Council retaliated by passing severe laws against the Roman Catholic religion. By one of these, all persons not repairing to their parish church for divine service were to forfeit £20 a month, and in default of the payment of these sums into the exchequer, the Crown might seize all the goods and two-thirds of the lands of the offender, leaving the remaining third for the maintenance of the said offender, his wife, children and family. By a later Act, it was made compulsory on all recusants to repair to their place of abode, and not to go five miles from thence, on pain of forfeiture of all their goods. They were likewise forbidden to retain in their service any domestics who did not conform to the established religion. [Staff. Hist. Col. vol. 5, new series, page 127.]

It was a severe test of loyalty for these west country families and many of them tried to be loyal both to their sovereign and to the church as well. They not only made a sorry mess of it for themselves, but the brothers who went to the

cities soon became members of the established church, while many of those who went beyond the sea to Holland became members of the reformed church, so that thereby families were greatly divided on religious lines. It was not many years until it was possible to tell quite accurately a man's relationship to the ruling king by noticing the church which he attended. Thus for a time religion and politics became very badly mixed in English affairs. It was positively disloyal at this time to belong to the Catholic Church and Queen Elizabeth made every effort to secure the adhesion of her subjects, making for this purpose royal visitations into all the counties. She visited Staffordshire in 1575 after her entertainment by Leicester at Kenilworth, from which place she came to Lichfield on 27 July, and thence went for some days to Chartley, whose owner, Walter Devereux, had just sailed to Ireland. Stafford made great preparations for her coming; every house was newly painted, the streets gravelled and the cross repaired. She arrived on 8 August, and was met by the bailiffs on foot, who presented to her a cup two foote or more in height, which she most lovingly received, saying most gracious favourable words, which were duly responded to. Whilst in Staffordshire the Queen had learnt that many of the Roman Catholics of the county had ceased to attend their parish churches, and on reaching Sudeley Castle on the 12th August two precepts were signed by the Secretaries Smith and Walsingham, requiring the attendance before the Privy Council of Brian Fowler and John Gifford, Esquires, Justices of the Peace, John Dracot (Draicote), Erasmus Wolvesley (Wollesley) of Wolvesley Bridge, Frauncis Gatacre, Thomas Peshall of Horseleye, Sampson Erdeswicke, and William Muxfield (Macclesfield) for refusing to come to the church. [Victoria History of Staffordshire, by Wm. Page, London 1908.]

At the Council held at Worcester on the 17th August, at which were present the Lord Chamberlain, the Earl of Warwick (Ambrose Dudley), the Earl of Leicester, Mr. Treasurer, Mr. Comptroller, Mr. Secretary Smith, assisted by the Bishops of Hereford, Worcester, Lichfield, and Coventry, and Rochester, those summoned to appear before their Lordships, made their appearances accordingly and being called in and charged that they went not to church and confessing the same, were afterwards one by one called in apart to show what causes they had so to do, and they alleging their consciences and examples of their forefathers who taught them so, and seeming to be contented to be commoned with, for their better instruction were by their Lordships referred to a conference to be had with them by the Bishops above named and other learned men the next day, and upon their report of their towardness and conformity their Lordships would take further order. [Staff. Hist. Col. vol. 5, new series, page 128-129.]

Worcester, 19 August, 1575. The same day were called before their Lordships the Bishops Hereford, Worcester, Coventry, and Lichfield, and Rochester, to make report of such conferences as they were appointed to have with such gentlemen of the county of Stafford as refused to come to church, who having declared to their Lordships the little effect of their conference had as yet wrought with them, their Lordships thinking by grant of some more time to be conferred with, they might be brought to better conformity, called them in apart and declared unto every of them that considering the little conformity they had as yet

shown, they could not be suffered to return home unless they would more dutifully submit themselves to obey and follow her Majesty's laws, the breach whereof in men of their calling for example sake could not be tolerated, and for that upon further conference with learned men it was hoped that the truth being declared unto them and their reasons and scruples which moved them being answered and removed, they then would conform themselves to her Majesty's laws, as became good subjects to do.

The prisoners were committed to the Bishop of Worcester, to remain with him for conference till Michelmas Even next, in which conference they might freely declare their conscience, show such books and reasons as moved them to do as they did, and no advantage to be taken of any of their speeches, her Majesty's person only excepted, and in case before that time he should show any conformity, upon signification of the same from the said Bishop to their Lordships he should be dismissed and suffered to return home the sooner, but if by that time no good could be wrought, then was he to receive such further order, as their Lordships should think convenient.

This argument accomplished but little good, and it soon grew tiresome even to the Bishops' assistants, so those who had been heretofore committed for certain causes of obstinacie in Religion, namely for not going to the church in time of sermons and Common Prayer were allowed to depart home to their houses upon entering into a bond of £400 to observe the following conditions:—1. To return prisoners again by the first day of the next (Michaelmas) Term, in case in the meantime they should not bring good testimony from the Bishop of their diocese of their conformity in Religion. 2. To make their repair to the said bishop within five days after their return and after that once every month at the least, and make offer unto him of conference in Religion to be resolved in those points that they stand in doubt of, either by the bishop himself or by such other learned men as he shall appoint for that purpose. 3. Not to use any communication or arguments against the present state of Religion established in this realm, nor by writing or any other act induce any others to opinion contrary to the said Religion, except at the aforementioned conference. 4. Not to suffer any unnecessary repair of people to their houses, nor in any wise such as be of the contrary Religion, nor such as be known to absent themselves from their parish churches, neither shall they make any journeys or meetings abroad to or with such persons as be noted to be of the contrary Religion but to remain at home unless it shall be to resort to places requisite for following of their causes for which they do desire this liberty. [Staff. Hist. Col., vol. 1915, page 372-373.]

The bishop was also required not only to use all good means to reduce them to conformity but also to have an eye. . . . to see how they behave themselves.

In the autumn of 1577 Bishop Bentham was called upon by the Privy Council to make a return of the recusants in his diocese with an estimate of their annual income in lands and goods. With this return he sent a letter dated from Eccleshall Castle 10 Nov. 1577, in which he says: I have herewith returned an answer unto your honor's letters with that speed and diligence that in such shortness of time I could. Wherein according to Your Honor's appointment I have had and used the opinion and judgement of Mr. Trentham and Mr. Bagott for the state

of Staffordshire, which I find to be so small in mine opinion that where they give any (estimate) I set it down rather secretly than in sight, being bold to signify unto your honors mine own opinion and judgement of them (the recusants) in open view, which I take to be rather too little than too much, considering their states and doings which I have known above this xviten years, so that it is in your honors wisdom better to consider of the same.

On 1 February, 1577-8, he sent up a much fuller and more complete list of all such persons, gentlemen and others within the county of Stafford, which come not to the church to hear Divine Service, together with a revised estimate of their annual income, which in many cases was double that of his previous estimate. Even with this he was not altogether satisfied and wrote to the Privy Council: I perceive the case to be of great difficulty, for that I can find few trusty to deal with and fewer willing to utter what they know. Yet I have set down nothing with out the opinion of one or other which knew their states better than I.

His list is entitled: A list of the Staffordshire recusants mentioned by Bishop Bentham in his two returns and the estimates of their annual income from lands made by Messrs Trentham and Bagott—and of their total income from both lands and goods made by the bishop in his last return. Only an approximate estimate is given in each case, which is made indifferently in pounds or marks; the latter estimates are here given roughly as pounds—e.g. 100 marks as £67, 200 marks as £133, &c. In those cases where only the wife of a man is named, the estimate is that of the income of her husband. Among those named by him were, Eccleshall.—Thos. Persall, Esq., and Jane, his wife (£40), 700 pounds; July 1, 1580 among the names of prisoners discharged appears that of Mr. Persal who had been committed by my Lord the Bishop of Winchester and by him enlarged, i.e. set at liberty. [Catholic Record Society, vol. 1, page 69.]

The intrigues of the Jesuits against Elizabeth provoked her to deal still more strongly with the recusants. In 1583, the sheriff of the county was ordered by Burghley and Walsingham to make an inventory of the property of Lord Paget at Beudesert who was affected to the Romish religion; and for favoring Mary his lands were forfeited. Elizabeth evidently had good cause for watching the recusants in Staffordshire; Thomas Morgan, Mary's most trusted agent, advised her if possible not to go out of Staffordshire which is altogether in her favor, and Ridworth (Ridware) is described as being a town where all are recusants. [Vic. Hist. of the Co. of Staff., by Wm. Page, London 1908.]

In 1585 people refusing to attend church were disarmed, and later on the arms taken from such persons were given to the queen's good subjects; consequently fifteen recusants were formally disarmed, of whom Sampson Erdeswick of Sandon was one. The commissioners appointed to search for recusants displayed in some cases too much zeal, some of them having searched Sampson Walkeden's house at Stone in a manner which led to inquiry by the sheriff on the order of the council.

There is a list, dated 1592, of recusants in the county divided into three classes, first those remaining at liberty, who were John Draicot of Painesley and Francis Gatagrea of Swynnerton, esquires; William Stapleton of Bradley, John Stapleton of the same place, Philip Draicot of Leigh, Sampson Erdeswick of

Sandon, William Maxfield of Mere, gentlemen; secondly those imprisoned, Humphrey Cumberford of Cumberford, Erasmus Wolseley of Wolseley Bridge, Hugh Erdeswick of Sandon; and thirdly those at liberty upon bonds, John Jifford of Chillington, Brian Fowler of the Manor upon Sow and Thomas Peshall.

This list looks as if the old Lancastrian crowd in Staffordshire had for the most part stood together in favor of the old church and against the queen. The student must however bear in mind that in England, at this period adhering to the established church was the test of loyalty to their royal ruler. The Queen was now largely under the control of the party of York, and there was a growing feeling among the Lancaster followers that a change would be a good thing, specially for them. Hence there were mutterings, some conspiring, and more or less open hostility, which manifested itself by attendance upon the services of the Catholic Church. The York supporters were now in power again in Staffordshire which was very unfortunate as this county was intensely Lancastrian in its sympathies and in its family relationships. The nobility were intensely loyal to their Queen, but these old Northumbrians were above all imbued with the thought that they and their ancestors had maintained themselves for all those years against the greatest odds and they were not going to be set aside even by the Queen's favorite. Unfortunately the old Yorkist Shrewsbury took this opportunity to pay off back scores with the Lancastrian recusants. At the same time he shielded his friends who committed like offences. But Shrewsbury was for some reason or other also friendly with the discontented who were trying to make certain the accession of King James of Scotland to the English throne. Although this was known, he managed to retain his hold under Queen Elizabeth. In 1595 his actions began to attract the notice of those in authority. It appears that the Earl of Shrewsbury had long before this been warned against retaining persons about him ill affected in religion, by whose countenance, given to men of that condition, many dangerous persons lurked in that shire, and most of the gentlemen grew afraid to enquire after such offenders; insomuch as some commissioners of the peace, for fear to offend the Earl, did find means to keep notable recusants from appearing at sessions and from being indicted at the assizes, to her Majesty's no small prejudice.

The mention of the Earl and Countess of Shrewsbury recalls one of the noteworthy Derbyshire characters of the period. The Countess was Mary Cavendish the daughter of the well-known Bess of Hardwick, a much married lady. She was the heiress of Hardwick and was the widow of Robert Barley or Barlow a neighboring squire when she was but thirteen years old. Then she married Sir William Cavendish of Suffolk, bore a large family, and became a second time a widow. She then married another richer knight, Sir William St Loe, after whose death she married George Talbot, and at the age of forty-eight became Countess of Shrewsbury. She was rated the most astute politician of her day and was greatly feared even by her friends. She survived her husband and tried to wield her old power during the lifetime of her son, Gilbert Talbot, the seventh Earl of Shrewsbury, who had married her daughter Mary Cavendish. Bess of Hardwick and her husband the sixth Earl of Shrewsbury had been the jailors of Mary Queen of Scots, and had thereby acquired the hatred of the Catholics and the dis-

trust of Queen Elizabeth and her followers. Her son chose however to follow his own political course.

The seventh Earl of Shrewsbury was a powerful factor in the conspiracy that finally culminated in bringing King James VI. of Scotland to the English throne as the successor to Queen Elizabeth. His home was at the same time so much frequented by Sir Robert Cecil, the first Earl of Salisbury, that Dame Rumor asserted that Cecil intended to marry one of Shrewsbury's daughters. Later, when it was found expedient to confine Lady Arabella Stuart to bounds, the home of the seventh Earl of Shrewsbury was selected for the place, and the visits of Cecil continuing, it was alleged that he was about to marry Lady Arabella and make himself king of England, in succession to Elizabeth, for whom he acted so fully as to make his contemporaries appreciate that he was really the sovereign. Shrewsbury was all the while working for the accession of King James, and it was no doubt by this means that in 1601 King James was able to obtain the cooperation of Salisbury in his efforts to secure the English throne, when Queen Elizabeth should have become deceased. Thus we see that Shrewsbury, while nominally for the Queen and with the Yorkists, was in reality the very fountain head of all the effort in this locality directed against his sovereign. He was so rich and powerful and in such close touch with all sides, that he could neglect the tongues of scandal and boldly punish his enemies. In 1595 things advanced too fast even for Shrewsbury so he felt called upon to prove his loyalty by doing something to his friends. So he selected one of his trusty lieutenants, Nicholas Williamson. He had Mr. Harper, a gent. of good living, a justice of the peace, the Earl's follower, one thought to be forward in the Earl's service, and therefore, being hollow, the more dangerous, write to this notable recusant, an inward favorite of the Earl's, that he and his wife should keep themselves out of the way for a time, for he and others had received private directions to proceed against all wilful papists from the Lords; assuring him that he would do his best with the justice of assize, and that if now he and his wife escaped, he would contrive all matters according to his desire and his friends hereafter; wishing him not to forget the bringing of the Earl's letter with him to the justice of assize. [The Counties of England, by P. N. Ditchfield, vol. I, page 146. Bess of Hardwick and her Circle, by Maud Stepney Rawson. A Life of Robert Cecil, First Earl of Salisbury, by Algernon Cecil. The Secret Correspondence of Sir Robert Cecil with James VI of Scotland.]

Nicholas Williamson, born a gent. and condemned for a riot, employed long before by the Earl in all his causes and purchases and protected after, fled into Holland, where he might have tarried at his pleasure, but being otherwise disposed, he went to Antwerp and lay in one George Mace's house, a practiser in the Earl's father's time for the Queen of Scots. There did Westmoreland and Fra. Dacres board, and thither daily resorted unto him Stanley, Jaques, Holte, and other traitors, as Williamson confesseth. From thence he went towards Scotland, and was taken on the Borders, and in his company one David Lawe, a Scottish priest made by the Bishop of Ross. He was then brought to London, examined by the Earl of Essex, and Sir Robert Cecil, and committed to the Gatehouse, close prisoner. Within a few days after it fell out plainly that Williamson

was sent by Crichton, the Scottish Jesuit, who writ to Rome that he had employed him to persuade the King of Scotland to be a Catholic, without which he could not get the Crown of England, saying further that if he would hear him he should have multos nobiles et multos plebes in Anglia, for this Williamson knew many men's minds in England, and that he had sent David Lawe to conduct him. Crichton's own letters were intercepted, and sent by the Count Maurice to the Queen, wherein all these things were written, and since showed Nicholas Williamson. [Mss. of Hon. Marquis of Salisbury.]

This was rather more than the Earl of Shrewsbury had counted upon so he brought Williamson back into England where he could be arrested and tried, the Earl no doubt depending upon Williamson's loyalty to get free from this serious charge. To do this it was necessary to point the hand of suspicion elsewhere. First of all it was necessary to be certain that there was no incriminating evidence available. Therefore May 29th, 1595; Examination was held of one John Hacker, of East Bridgeford, co. Holts, before Sir John Egerton & Att. Gen. Coke.—It appeared that the Earl of Shrewsbury had sent him to Persall's house at Horseley, Staffordshire, to fetch evidence because some enemies wanted to get them away and he missed divers evidences, and he requested him to send all writings to his custody, which Williamson told Persall that he would leave certain writings of the Earl with Thos. Williamson his brother for Persall. Jurdan of Wilford, co. Holts, had them but Persall got them from him and was perusing them lying abroad in a chamber. Asked for all that concerned his Lord, Persall delivered them but confessed that he had read their titles; put them into a bag which was sealed with his and Persall's seals, . . . . Told Persall that he missed some writings about Kingston—Persall said that Thos. Williamson in absence of Nich. Williamson's wife had been to her house and carried thence two or three chests to his house at Crick, Derbyshire. [S. P. Dom. Elizabeth, vol. 252, No. 38.]

Before this proceeding was held, the Earl had taken pains to see that he was possessed of every scrap of writing that Williamson possessed, as appears by the following: 1595, May.—A note of such as took away the writings and goods of Nicholas Williamson out of his house at Wylne in May, 1595. Hacker and Langley, two of the Earl's men, about the beginning of May, 1595, coming to Nicholas Williamson's house to Wylne in Derbyshire, where his wife doth lie, would have entered which his wife would not suffer them to do. Then they offered to have entered by force, which Williamson's wife did withstand; and thereupon they did send for Mr. John Harper, one of her Majesty's justices of peace in co. Derby. When he came they entered Williamson's house, searched every part and took away all the writings and papers they found there, which were a great company, and a great part of the goods in the same house; and searched in the steeple of the church there, where they did find divers things hidden which they did also take away. And Williamson's wife did deliver a great company of her husband's writings about January last past to the keeping of Mr. Pearsall of Staffordshire, as many as would go into two pillow beers. [Historical Mss. Commission, Calendar Mss. of the Hon. Marquis of Salisbury, H. G., preserved at Hatfield House, Hertfordshire, London 1814, part 5.]



Now everything was ready for the trial. So Williamson was produced and subjected to a rigid examination by interrogatories where they all could have plenty of time to go over the answers before they were reduced to writing, and a great show was made of impressing Williamson with the necessity of telling the truth, they saying to him: It will be but a folly for you to use fraud when truth is liker in all things to deserve compassion than falsehood; and as for these interrogatories which I make you, nothing can be hid, for the Earl (of Shrewsbury) hath received divers papers into his hands already concerning your private matters of law and suits; the rest are also forthcoming in others' hands of other matters, wherein nevertheless it is expected that you should speak clearly, that it may appear how you are to be credited in other things.

One can well appreciate the smile with which Williamson set down the words prepared for him to reply thereto, saying: Touching the rest of your note, that I should use open dealing, whereby in likelihood I should sooner obtain favor, I wish it no otherwise than I have already done and still purpose to do. When I served but a lady the world will witness I never feared to endanger my life in her service, and much less shall I fear any in the service of my sovereign. But alas! (Noble knight!) what I do write to do service to my most sacred sovereign, when I have no one perfect sense left me, but all surcharged with deep despair of her mercy, with the impressions of the lamentations of my aged parents, wife and dearest friends, and the horror of a most ignominious death. My mind can work upon nothing else but to excogitate reasons to defend my innocency, loyalty, and sincere intents at the most dreadful bar against that learned and most severe Mr. Attorney and the rest. But free me from these fears, and then if I be feared from doing anything that may tend to her Majesty's service, let that be a judgment to me of the highest treason.

I perceive by your note that my lord (of Shrewsbury) hath searched my house and gotten some writings forth of it, and do thereby also conceive that he hath molested the tenants of their rents received by me. His doing the one (according to my doubt alleged before) did argue he would do the other. But if I may be blessed with my liberty he shall not, God willing, be acquitted by the one or benefited by the other. Touching the money I received, I will willingly be tried by a jury of his own men, dwelling nearest unto me and knowing most of my chargeable employments, whether less than I received can be due unto me. For the things taken in my name, it was first his pleasure they should so be, and after his fault that they were not altered, for I wrote two letters presently after my judgment in the Star Chamber to that effect.

And for his honor's relieving of us for the riot, though more nor less spoken of him in the Star Chamber, yet if he shall deny to do it as not bound in honor or conscience, I will prove it if I be commanded.

Endorsed by Cecil:—3 June 1595. Nych. Williamson to me from the Gatehouse. 1595. Interrogatories ministered to Nych. Wylliamson, nine in number, relating to certain writings left by him in his house or elsewhere, and as to his relations with one Jordan, one Pygott, one Persall of Staffordshire, one Hacker and one Langley. (In Cecil's handwriting.)

A few years later Cecil himself became mixed up in the conspiracy to bring King James VI. of Scotland to the English throne as the successor of Queen Elizabeth. Wotton tells a story which appears in Algernon Cecil's life of Robert Cecil, page 182, as follows: The Queen was one day driving with Cecil as minister-in-attendance on the heath near Greenwich, when a horn was heard and a post-boy came riding along. Elizabeth called the rider and asked him where he came from. He replied that he was from Scotland. Upon which she stopped her coach and told him to deliver the packet to Cecil. The Secretary had reason to suppose that the letters included some items

of the secret correspondence he was having with King James VI. of Scotland, and that in a few moments the Queen would be acquainted with his conduct. A less ready man would have sought some pretext to avoid undoing the bundle. He, however, merely asked for a knife to cut the fastenings; and then while at a safe distance from the Queen, complained of its evil smell and advised her to defer its perusal until it had been aired. The Queen who hated foul smells fell in with the suggestion, and Cecil secured the opportunity he sought to remove the compromising papers.

1595, about June 3. Answers to Interrogatories. 1. I left in my house at my departure, with my brother Thos. Williamson, all such writings as I had, viz., notes, surveys, or particulars touching lands I had bought for my lord, or all his other affairs wherein I had been employed; all the letters written unto me since my coming to my lord's service, and divers scholastical exercises, as orations, verses, &c., bound in bundles and put into five bags, as I remember.

2. I left nothing in any other man's house.

3. All the letters which my lord and lady, Mr. Bouth or Mr. Kidman writ unto me, I put into bags and sealed them up, and wished my brother to deliver them unto Jurdan (because I feared his house might be searched for them), and desired Jurdan to receive them and keep them until my cousin Mr. Tho. Pershall, of Staffordshire should come into the country, and then to deliver them to him to keep till my return. I imparted also unto him that I purposed to absent myself for a time. I desired him also in my absence to solicit Mr. Markham to make my peace with Sir Tho. Stanhope. I told him also that if my lord would not procure my pardon, and of all the rest which were at the pulling down of the weir, I would manifest unto the Lords of the Council in what sort I was drawn into that action, whereby his honor should be bound in honor and conscience to relieve us. (Margin: This I also told Pigot.) I told him also that if my lord did molest any of the tenants of whom I had received the rents, or injure any of my friends for my sake, I would give Sir Thomas all the advantages I could against his honor, both in the great action of Scandalum and in sundry other matters. I told him also that if he should advertise me of these things by my cousin James Williamson, and that also Mr. Stanhopes would discharge me of those troubles and procure me to serve my lord of Essex, I would presently return and maintain all these things against my lord in revenge of the wrongs. These were the special matters I committed unto him, and many others I told him, for I did specially trust him, but I cannot remember them upon such a sudden.

I am joint purchaser with Mr. Leonard Bamfort of Babington's remainder, and there be some assurances for parcels in Kingston in my name, and some other small things I have notes of.

4, 5, 6. Answered in the three first.

7. I know not what things are hidden in the steeple, unless Commin, the minister, hid some of his household stuff there, which I heard him say he would for fear of seizure.

8. Answered in my first and third answer.

9. Mr. Pershall is a gentleman of good worth and married my wife's cousin germain; he dwelleth at Horseley in Staffordshire. Hacker was a proctor or such like towards the civil law, and now the chief agent or overseer of all my lord's

business in the country. Langley hath been long my lord's servant, and was at my departure bailly of Roteram.

Endorsed by Cecil:—Answers to Interrogatories.

So much for Mr. Williamson's story. Now to present the same from Thomas Pershall's standpoint.

Sir Thomas Egerton, Master of the Rolls, and Attorney General Coke to Sir Robert Cecil. 1595, June 14.—Mr. Persall attended on us this morning at the Rolls, whom we examined on such points as we thought fit, and after caused him to set down in writing the whole matter, as everything fell out in course of time, which herewith we send you. We have also examined Mr. Persall's son, who attended on us this afternoon, and caused him likewise to set down his whole knowledge concerning all those things whereof we examined him, which likewise we send herewith; and we find no material variance between them and the former examines. Mr. Persall hath brought up two bags of papers which he received from Williamson's wife, and do (as he saith) concern the Earl (of Shrewsbury's) private affairs, and are, he affirmeth, of no great moment. These bags we have sealed up without any view of them by us, and according to their lordships' letters, the same do remain with me, the Master of the Rolls, till he have direction concerning the same. We have committed Mr. Persall to the custody of John More, of London, a citizen of good account and well affected, as we understand. His son we have committed to the custody of a messenger, Jo. Puttrell, both of them to remain in safe custody, without conference with any, until your pleasure be further known.

We have examined, according to your commandment, David Law, priest, whose examination we send herewith.—14 June, 1595. Signed. Enclosing:—(1) Mr. Persall's declaration, 14 June, 1595. About Bartholomewtide last the wife of Nicholas Williamson, being cousin german to my wife, came unto my house, and told me of some breach betwixt her husband and her, and that she had been with her sister Bold in Lancashire, but upon some dislike between them she came away, and her husband's will was she should not come home before he sent for her. Having some occasion near his house, I took occasion to go thither to know the cause; and after he had told me of many matters of unkindness betwixt them, he said he would deal well with her, and leave her £200 in stock, and Feakon further to the value of £40, which way she should be provided for, and then told me his desperate case, that he could not remain long for there was process daily for him, and till the Star Chamber were over passed he would get him away, speaking of Yorkshire where his father's friends dwell, speaking also of Wales, and in the end he would go over the sea. Told me further he had spent much in my lord of Shrewsbury's service, and if my lord would deal well with him upon his departure—for he meant then, as it seemed, he would recompense himself with some of my lord's money—he should find he would deal well with him again; if not, he had letters touching his scandala magnatum, which but upon extremity he would not show, but they were such as would touch his credit. I wished him to depart an honest man and then he might with good face come again, but if he should deal so with his master, no man would esteem him: whereupon he said he would deliver them to me before his going, and also a note touch-

ing the course he would take for his wife, that I might call for it if it were denied, and so I departed from him. In the beginning of Michaelmas term, having occasion to go to London, I met him there, and he told me my lord of Shrewsbury was coming up, and that he would be gone before his coming, confessing he had taken certain of his rents, which he hoped my lord would not take in ill part all things considered, and that he had left the letters touching the scandala magnatum with his brother Thomas to be delivered unto me, and would make a note in writing touching his wife's estate against the next morning and deliver it to me. That was the last time I saw or heard from him, and he left nothing as promised touching his wife. After Allhallowtide I met Thomas Williamson, his brother, in the Temple, and asked whether his brother had not delivered letters to him, touching matters of my lord of Shrewsbury, to be delivered to me. He said no, but there were some bags of writings at his brother's house and they might be amongst them. I wished him to look for them and keep them safe. A week before Christmas I sent into Derbyshire some of my servants to will his wife to keep her Christmas with me, and bade my man ask her touching those letters. She told him she did not know of them, but thought her brother Thomas Williamson had gotten them; but she said there was two bags of writings which she would get and she could, and it might be they were amongst them, but she doubted they were taken out by her brother. Either Christmas week or the next week after she sent two bags of writings which had wax upon the strings like seals, but the print was not to be seen. The same week I opened them and superficially looked them over, specially looking for those letters, which were not there; and the rest, being reckonings and matters of bargains and accounts, with other private letters of his friends, I put them all up again, and so they remained till the second or third week in Lent there came a letter from Charles Pershall, my kinsman, servant to the Earl of Shrewsbury, signifying that my lord was let to understand I had divers evidences and writings concerning his lordship come unto my hands, which his lordship marvelled I would keep and not deliver to him, wishing, for his credit, as also that my lord should not have cause hardly to conceive of me, that I would bring them up at my coming to London. I wrote him again there was no evidence, neither touching inheritance nor lease concerning my lord nor no man else; that I found only letters and reckoning and nothing of effect; but if I might know my lord's pleasure I would search more specially to satisfy him, or if he would send any of his servants they should see what they were for his better satisfaction. So they remained till a week after Easter: meaning then to go to the town, one morning I willed my son to take the two bags and peruse the rest, having perused some of them before, and to lay by letters written from my lord or my lady, which he might see by the superscription. As he was searching, came in two of (the) said lord's men, and one of them told me he was come for certain writings touching his lordship and showed me my lord's letter to that effect. I brought him up to my son, where divers of my lord's letters were laid aside, and he and his fellow passed over the rest that were betwixt any of Williamson's friends and him, and as they found anything touching my lord and lady's letters from them, articles of bargains, and such like, they put them all together, and I sealed and delivered them; neither those nor

any that were there touching any matter but private affairs, either touching my lord or his private friends, and those that remained behind I have brought up and am ready to deliver.—Thomas Pershall. Underwritten:—13 Junii, 1595. All this is written by Mr. Pershall himself and by him affirmed to be true, before us, Tho. Egerton, Edw. Coke.

(2) The declaration of John Persall, taken the 14th day of June, 1595. About Easter, one afternoon, my father commanded me to peruse certain letters, and those that did concern the lord of Shrew(sbury) to lay by themselves. I did peruse them two several times, and the last time my father with one of my lord's men called Thacker, came into the chamber, which Thacker likewise did peruse them, and those that he thought did concern the Earl he put into a bag and sealed them up and took them away with him. Those letters I read were concerning the lands in Kingston and Sawly, that Williamson should look his bargains were worth the money that they should cost; some from my lady concerning provision for her house; and some from one Kideman, my lord's man, to let all things be in a readiness against my lord's coming to Sawly. For those letters, papers or writings I read then, was not one concerning any matter of state.—John Pershall.

Underwritten:—He confessed before us that this whole declaration being of his own handwriting, is true.—Tho. Egerton, Edw. Coke. Here we have a positive statement, certified to by a competent authority, that these papers are in the respective handwriting of Thomas and his son John, who was afterwards made a Baronet, and were signed by their own hand. The reader's attention is therefore specially directed to the spelling, Pershall.

(3) The examination of David Lawe, priest, taken the 14th day of June, 1595. He confesseth that all he hath written in his letters to my Lord Treasurer of the report of Creyton the Jesuit, he knoweth no otherwise than by the report of Creyton; but he well remembereth that Creyton did signify so much to him as he hath written in those letters, and Creyton used these speeches to him a day before Williamson and he came from Douai. This examine asked Creyton at that time, what the Englishman's name was that should go with him to Scotland, but Creyton would not tell him. Examine also saith Williamson might well know he was a priest, because he did daily see him use the breviary beyond the sea, but saith he did not tell Williamson he was a priest; and saith that Williamson and he took shipping at Calais in a Scottish ship of Leith, but, by reason of the contrary wind and that Williamson was very sick at sea, they landed at Yarmouth, and this examine, by the persuasion of Williamson (who said that he fled only for debt), accompanied him towards Scotland till they were taken.

He confesseth himself to be a priest, made at Brussels about a fortnight before the feast of St. Luke last, but that, as he is a priest, he knoweth not how to say mass, neither can say it without direction. And saith that Creyton, as he thinketh, told Williamson that the lord prior of Pluscartie (Pluscardine), the Earl of Huntly, the Earl of Angus, and the Earl of Errol were Catholics; and Williamson inquired after of this examine which was the greatest of them, and where and in what parts of the country they dwelt. And confesseth that Williamson told examine at Carlisle, after their apprehension, then being in Henry Lee's house in Carlisle, that it would be the worse for him if this examine were known what

he was, meaning if he were known to be a priest, as he thinketh; whereupon examine the same night did bury his breviary in a dunghill in Carlisle. And saith that he thinketh that Creyton told Williamson that this examine was a priest.—David Law. Underwritten:—examined by us, Tho. Egerton, Edw. Coke.

1595, July 11.—Mr. Hacker writes:—Understanding that her Highness hath given order for the discharging of Mr. Pearsalls, Mr. Hacker and the rest, which were sent for concerning my Lord of Shrewsbury, I cannot but signify unto you my grief of mind that I, which for these 24 years have with all sincerety of heart faithfully served her Majesty and endeavored to make manifest my loyalty and unfeigned zeal, should not be worse conceived of than any of them.

It is remarkable how boldly all the parties seem to have defied the great Elizabeth. One cannot read this account without wondering why all the parties were not sent to the Tower and from there to the block.

It is interesting to note the style of spelling the family name. An examination of the originals discloses that both Thomas and his son in signing their declarations wrote their names Pershall. At the same time the various spellings in Eccleshall Church Register show—Peasall, 7 Nov. 1594; Pershall, August, 1597, and later the changes noted are Pearshull of 14 Nov. 1599; Piercall, 1695; Pirshall, 1697, and in the name of the vill, May 1672, as Piereshall; while in the text of the above story of Nicholas Williamson the family name is spelled Pearsall, Persall and Pershall. The clerks of the records, as is proven by the index, giving the decided preference to the spelling Pearsall, which is also true of the indexes of all the public documents examined in England that are of contemporary date. Invariably they were indexed as Pearsall without regard to the spelling in the text. This must not, however, be taken as indicating any more than that the family is now generally known in England as Pearsall, as the indexes were made many years after the documents were recorded.

The most remarkable part of the story of the quarrels of the Staffordshire nobles is that we find the same alignment of families as have appeared in this history during the generations that lived during the period of the War of the Roses. One can turn backwards a little over a century and read in this family history the same names battling for the house of Lancaster as were now classed as recusants secretly helping King James of Scotland to succeed to the English throne.

It was to be expected when King James came to the throne, and England awoke to the desire for a colonial empire, not only that the brothers who had gone to London should be part of this movement, but that even in this far western county every member of the family should become interested, and their relatives by marriage likewise. Among the rest the family of Phettiplace, as is shown by the records of the Virginia Company as follows: Whereas it appears by an acquittance presented at a Court held in England for Virginia July 17, 1622, under Sir Thomas Smith's hand, dated the 9th day of September, 1607, that Mr. William Phetiplace being an ancient planter paid unto Sir Thomas Smith, then Treasurer for Virginia the sum of £10 which being somewhat short of the purchase of a share, the court notwithstanding upon his humble request and promise to plant the same within some convenient time have been pleased to remit him the odd money and to allow him 100 acres of land old adventure, upon a first

division for which direction shall be give to the governor to cause the same to be set out for him according to the orders of the Company. [Records of the Virginia Company, vol. II, page 97.]

And the family of Veere with whom the Pershalls were related by marriage. Records of the Virginia Company, May 11, 1620, Whereas Sir Nath. Rich. hath by order of the Court had some conference two or three times with General Cecil about an Enginear to be sent to Virginia, ye Company hath since dealth with Sir Horatio Veere, who is also exceedingly willing and ready to assist them with his best furtherance so that by both their means they may be the better supplied. Lieutenant General Verre was admitted to the Council of the Virginia Company February 5, 1623. [*Ibid.*, vol. 1, page 339; vol. II, page 261.]

Michael Phettiplace, Gent. and William Phettiplace, were among those who supported the first and second colonies to Virginia. Sir Horatio Vere was a member of the Second Virginia Colony. [Records of the Virginia Company.]

Edmund Windsor of Stoke Pogis, Buckinghamshire, Knight of the Carpet Oct. 2, 1553, his eldest son Robert had a son Samuel, whose son Joshua Windsor, emigrated to America and settled in Providence in 1638. [Parshall Book, page 185.]

### SECTION 3, DIVISION B.

SIR JOHN PESHALL, Baronet, son of Thomas Pershall, Chapter 26, Section 3, Division A, born Feb. 22, 1562; died January 13, 1646, at Sugnal; married in 1590, Anne Selden, daughter of Ralph Seldon or Sheldon of Beoly of Worcestershire and his wife Anne, daughter of Sir Robert Throgmorton, of Caughton, Warwickshire. She died March 30, 1613, and was buried with her husband at Eccleshall Church. The Register of christenings, burials and marriages in the Parish of St. Mary, in the town of Shrewsbury, in the county of Salop, beginning April, 1584, gives the following: Dec. 25, 1644. Sir John Paearsall, buried in the chancel. Children:—

1. Elizabeth, born March 20, 1593. See below Q.
2. Anne Peshall, born July 23, 1594. See below R.
3. Thomas Peshall, born April 3, 1596; bapt. April 19, 1596—buried June 6, 1634. Chapter 26, Section 3, Division C.
4. Jane Peshall, born August 10, 1597; bapt. August 14, 1597. See below S.
5. Margaret Peshall, born August 13, 1598; bapt. Sept. 10, 1598. See below T.
6. William Peshall, born October 7, 1601; bapt. Oct. 20, 1601. Chapter 26, Section 3, Division D.
7. Dorothy Peshall, born Nov. 3, 1603; bapt. See below U.
8. Catherine Peshall, born June 2, 1605. See below V.
9. John Peshall, born July 12, 1606; bapt. Aug. 5, 1606. See below W.
10. Phillippa Peshall, born Sept. 1, 1607; bapt. Sept. 15, 1607. See below X.
11. Robert Peshall, born December 2, 1608; died unmarried. See below Y.
12. Frances Peshall; born Aug. 20, 1609; bapt. Aug. 15, 1609. See below Z.

John Pershall was created baronet 10 Jas. I. November 25, 1612. In 1615 he was High Sheriff of Staffordshire.

In Chancery Proceedings James I. (1603-1625, Bundle 3, No. 19) dated February 5, 1602, between John Peshall Esq. of Horsley, complainant and John Jarvis and Humphrey Jarvis his son of the Parish of Eccleshall, County Stafford, defendants; the controversy was about the ownership of certain arable lands in Sugnell als Little Sugnell als Dorslow in the Parish of Eccleshall, in the County of Stafford, known by the names of Great Wafield als Dorslow Leafield, particularly referring to a parcel called Williams yard. This property had anciently been of the inheritance of Robert Harcourt of Horsley, County Stafford, Esquire, who demised the same to one Robert Jarvis who paid rent to said Harcourt. His son Robert Jarvis, late of Clement Fine, County of Wirt, Gent, deceased, was heir and thereby became seized of the Manor of Chatcull, in the township of Chatcull, in said County of Stafford, now or late in the holding or occupancy of William Iremonger (who is called his loving friend in the will of Robert Peshall, uncle of John Peshall, the plaintiff herein), Henry Trycket, Francis Twice, Widow Lovat, John Jarvis and Humphrey Jarvis. And being so thereof seized the said Robert Jarvis by indenture of Bargain and Sale conveyed the premises to William West, gent, likewise since deceased. William West by indenture, dated 1571, conveyed the same to John Peshall the complainant, who thereby became possessed thereof including that part of the said premises called William Yard or Williams Yard, late in the holding of James Jarvis, gent, and now in the holding of John Jarvis and Humphrey Jarvis or one of them the said defendants.

In some way the defendants obtained possession of the deeds and other evidences to the title of said premises and they set up a claim to a greater interest than John Peshall was willing to concede to them. In their answer the defendants say that Robert Jarvis gentleman was seized in his demesne as of free in a portion of said estate called Little Leafield, als Little Dorslow, in Sugnell, in County Stafford, and of a messuage and marsh place and of lands, tenements and hereditaments, appurtenant thereto in Chatcull, in said County, including said Williams yard. And being so thereof seized by his indenture dated October 20, 1547, demised and leased the same unto the defendants John Jarvis and Elizabeth his wife and Humphrey Jarvis during their natural lives and the longest life of them at a certain annual rent. After the death of said Robert the reversion in the said premises came to Robert Jarvis of Clement Fine, County Middlesex, who by deed of conveyance sold the same to said John Jarvis and his heirs who afterwards did convey the same to Humphrey Jarvis, reserving to himself an estate for life in the one moiety of said messuage, marsh and land; and they paid said Robert Jarvis a rental which they have since his Robert Jarvis's conveyance, to John Peshall, paid to the latter. From which it appears that there was no real difference between the parties. The Answer is not only signed by the Solicitor, Lawton, but as well by F. Lovat, William Iremonger, and William Shropshire.

In his replication John Peshall points out that the defendants cannot get title from Robert Jarvis, as he held under Robert Harcourt, and therefore the defendants are limited to the estate of Robert Jarvis. He also pointed out that the defendants were likewise claiming under John Iremonger who had an estate for life in said pasture holding the same of the said John Peshall. This the defendants denied.



Sir John when a lad, and later as a young man, signed his name as Pershall but with the acquisition of the large wealth flowing from his investments in the tobacco monopoly, with his uncle Edmond Pearsall, and after he became baronet, acting on the advice of Erdeswicke, the genealogist, who was also the friend of the family, Sir John went back to the original spelling of Peshall. In the list of the Trayned Horse for the County of Stafford, taken at Stafford the fifth day of June, and at Litchfield the second day of October, in the year 1634, appears the name of Sir John Pershall Bt. [Hist. Coll. Staff., vol. 15, page 229.]

Sir John Peshall and all the members of his immediate family were heavily interested in the tobacco monopoly, consequently he reaped largely from its profits. The land records of Staffordshire disclose several large transactions by him in real estate, the funds for which came out of the tobacco venture. Sir John was rated a very rich man and his investments extended to many parts of England. The profits were so sudden and the amount so large that it was only three years after the incorporation of the Virginia Company venture that he began to acquire large land holdings in England.

On the Octaves of St. Hillary, 10 James I. (1613) Between John Sherratt and Thomas Buxston, complainant and John Peshal, baronet, deforciant of 3 messuages, a cottage, 32 acres of land, 8 acres of meadow, common of pasture of all kinds of cattle & common of turbary in Alveton, otherwise Alton and Fareley. [Staff. Hist. Col., vol. 4, new series, page 45.]

On the Octaves of St. Hilary, 11 James I. (1614) Between Peter Waters complainant and John Pershall baronet, Thomas Broughton armiger, and Thomas Abbott gentleman, deforciants of 50 acres of land, 12 acres of meadow and 50 acres of pasture, 14 acres of wood, and 6s. rent in Great Sugnall, Little Sugnall and Eccleshall. [*Ibid.*, vol. 4, new series, page 61.]

In the names of the knights, esquires, and gentlemen within the county of Stafford with their several hundreds, taken in the visitation made by Richard St. George Mowry, king of arms, in August 1614.—appears that of Sir John Peshall, knt, and Bart. [*Ibid.*, vol. 5, part 2, page 30.]

On the Quindene of St. Martin, 16 James I. (1619) Between Richard Fleetwood, baronet, Hatton Farmer, knight, and Robert Peshall armiger, complainants and John Peshall baronet and Thomas Peshall armiger, deforciants of the manors of Horsley, Great Sugnall, Little Sugnall, Bishops Offley, Aspley and Chatcull with the appurtenances, and of 100 messuages, 100 cottages, 200 gardens, 200 orchards, 1,000 acres of land, 300 acres of meadow, 1,000 acres of pasture, 200 acres of wood, 1,000 acres of furze and heath and free warren in Horsley, Great Sugnall, Little Sugnall, Byshops Offley, Asply, Chatcull, High Offley, Slidon, Eccleshalle, Brockton, Dorslowe, Iillsalle, Croxton, Butchford, Bullerton and Gryn. John and Thomas remitted all rights to the complainants and to the heirs of Richard. [Staff. Hist. Col., vol. 6, new series, page 59.]

On the Quindene of Easter 29 Elizabeth. (1587) Between John Pershall complainant and William West and Winifred his wife, deforciants of the manor of Chatkill and of 6 messuages, 4 cottages, 3 tofts, 6 gardens, 200 acres of land, 50 acres of meadow, 50 acres of pasture, 20 acres of wood, common of pasture for all beasts and 12s. rent in Chatkull, otherwise Chatkill, Domslowe, otherwise

Doreslowe, Sugnall Parva, otherwise Little Sugnall, Podmore Standon, otherwise Staun Croxton and Aspley. William and Winifred remitted. [*Ibid.*, vol. 5, page 173.]

Final Concords On the Octaves of St. Michael, 33 Elizabeth. Between John Pershall gentleman, complainant, and James Bothome, deforciant of 2 messuages, 50 acres of land, 10 acres of meadow, 40 acres of pasture, 4 acres of wood and common of pasture for all beasts at Brockton, Slyndon and Aspley. James remitted. [*Ibid.*, vol. 16, page 114.]

On the Octaves of St. Michael, 40 Elizabeth. (1598) Between John Peshall, armiger, complainant, and Thomas Homersley and William Homersley deforciants of a third part and a moiety of a third part of a messuage, a garden, an orchard, 40 acres of land, 20 acres of meadow, 30 acres of pasture, 6 acres of wood, 20 acres of furze and heath, 10 acres of moor and common of pasture, for all cattle in Little Suggenhull and Dearnley. [*Ibid.*, vol. 16, page 185.]

On the Octaves of St. Michael, 41 Elizabeth. (1599) Between John Pearshall armiger and William Foster and John Jackson, complainants and William West armiger and Thomas West gentleman, younger brother of the said William deforciants of 4 messuages, a cottage, a barn, a watermill, 80 acres of land, 40 acres or meadow, 80 acres of pasture, 4 acres of wood and a common of pasture for all beasts in Brockton, Slydon, otherwise Slynne, Aspley and Eccleshall. [*Ibid.*, vol. 16, page 195.]

The progress of time and the sequence of historical events had brought King James of Scotland to the throne of England. The house of Stuart now reigned over the kingdom of Great Britain, and Scotland. The house of Stuart was descended from the Fitz Alans with whom the Peshales intermarried, and the house of Fitz Alan was of the Earls of Arundel under whom the Peshales held their lands. At this very time James I. of England, on his way from Scotland to assume the throne of England, was entertained by Lord Lumley who was a descendant of the oldest son of Ligulph, and Thomas Pershall and his son John Pershall had been actively engaged in preparing the way for this very succession to the throne of England. In this they were not alone, so that the old Lancaster crowd was once more on top in local politics. The son of the ardent Catholic of the last generation is now the open supporter of the established Church, hence we find, June 15, 1604, in the very first year of the new king's reign a grant to John Persall of the benefit to the recusancy of John Draycot, co. Stafford. [S. P. Dom., James I., vol. 44, No. 39.]

At 3 weeks from the Holy Trinity, 6 James I. 1609. Between John Peshall armiger, complainant and Hugh Swynnerton gentleman, John Swynnerton gentleman, and Thomas Swynnerton deforciants of a messuage, 5 cottages, 6 gardens, 4 orchards, 140 acres of land, 20 acres of meadow, and 50 acres of pasture in Eccleshall. [Staff. Hist. Col., vol. 3, new series, page 14.]

At 15 days from Easter Day, 7 James I. 1610. Between Thomas Tyldesley armiger, John Peshall armiger, Edward Windsor armiger, and Edmund Brever gentleman, complainants and Richard Fleetwood armiger deforciant of the manors of Caldwell, Wooton under Weaver, Quicksele, Prestwood and le Verd of Elaston with the appurtenances and of 100 messuages, 100 cottages, 200 barns,

500 tofts, 3 water mills, 12 dove cots, 200 gardens, 1000 acres of land, 500 acres of meadow, 1000 acres of pasture, 1000 acres of wood, 1000 acres of furze and heath, 1000 acres of moor and 40s. rent in Caldwell, Wooton under Weaver, Elston, Quickselle, Prestwood, Stanton Northwood, Ramson, Calton Alton Farley and Wart and of the Rectory of Elston, and of the advowson of the vicarage of the church of Elston, and also the pound pledge in Caldwell, Woolton and le Verd, of Elaston, all of which land records disclose that John Peshall was a very rich man. [Staff. Hist. Col., vol. 3, new series, page 28.]

In 1611, the reigning King, James I., instituted the order of Baronet, and Sir John was one of the first on whom the honor was conferred, he being given the order on November 25th, 1611. When first instituted, all Baronets were styled of Ulster, or of Nova Scotia, Sir John being a Baronet of Ulster. As such he was entitled to carry on his shield the Red Hand of Ulster in the form of a small inescutcheon—Arg. a sinister hand, couped at the wrist and appaumeé, gu.—and to surmount his crest with a coronet.

November 13, 1611, Mr. John Chamberlain wrote to Sir Dudley Carlton then ambassador to Venice that the Baronets multiply too slowly, yet there are some few lately come. The number made at this time was seventeen and their patents bore date November 25, 1611; inter alia he named John Pershall of Horsley, Staffordshire, Esquire.

Public Record Office, Chancery Lane, London. Depositions—dated 1615. James I. (Bundle 29. No. 19. Peshall v Trickett) Sir John Peshall against Henrye Trickett & Anne his wife & Thomas Shelley defts. In primis—Did you know Wm Garvis & Wm West, gents, deceased, or how many, or which of them doe or did you know? Item—Doe you know the Manner or townshipp of Chabruell, also doe you know a pasture or parcell of ground called Gorstye Briche?

On the Quindene of Easter, 16 James I. 1619. Between Edward Windsor armiger complainant and John Peshall baronet deforciant of a messuage, 40 acres of land, 10 acres of meadow, 100 acres of pasture, and 10 acres of wood in Haughton. [*Ibid.*, vol. 6, part 1, page 44.]

On the Octaves of St. Michael. 17 James I. 1620. Between John Peshall baronet and George Walker gentleman, complainants and Francis Trentham knight, Thomas Trentham knight, son and heir apparent of said Francis, deforciants of the manor of Rocester otherwise Roceter and 20 messuages, 30 cottages, 10 tofts, 30 barns, 3 watermills, 1 fulling mill, 3 dove cots, 50 gardens, 50 orchards, 500 acres of land, 200 acres of meadow, 300 acres of pasture, 100 acres of wood, 100 acres of furze and heath, 10 acres of moor and view of frankpledge in Rocester, otherwise Roceter, Cambridge, Crakemerse, Denston, Alton, Beddulph, Chiddersley, Whitgram, Stafford, Luke, Kilderson and Stone and of a free fishery in the waters of Dove and Chermet. [*Ibid.*, vol. 7, new series, page 205.]

On the Octaves of Holy Trinity. 20 James I. 1623. Between Sir John Peshall baronet, and Sir Richard Fleetwood knight, and baronet, complainant and Edward Stanford armiger, deforciant of the manors of Packington with the appurtenances and of 2 messuages, 6 cottages, 7 gardens, 7 orchards, 200 acres of land, 20 acres of meadow, 100 acres of pasture, 50 acres of wood, 500 acres of furze and heath and 50 acres of moor in Packington, Whettington, Tyrmoor,

co. Stafford, and of the manors of Buely and Wesbury otherwise Westbury in co. Gloucester. [Staff. Hist. Col., vol. 10, page 23.]

Final Concords. On the Octaves of Holy Trinity. 20 James I. 1623. Between John Pershall baronet and Richard Fleetwood knight and baron, and Edward Stanford armiger, deforciant of the manor of Packington and of 2 messuages, 6 cottages, 7 gardens, 7 orchards, 200 acres of land, 20 acres of meadow, 100 acres of pasture, 50 acres of wood, 500 acres of furze and heath, 50 acres of moor in Packington, Whittington and Tymoore and of the manors of Buely and Westburge of the co. Gloucester. [*Ibid.*, vol. 4, new series, page 26.]

Public Record Office, Chancery Lane, London. Depositions—dated 10. Feb. 1634. (Bundle 14. No. 12. Peshall Bt. v Harris) 1. In primis—doe or did you knowe Sir John Peashall, Barronett the complt. and Lucee late wife of Willm Harris defendant And did you knowe the said Willm Harris deceased yea or noe and how longe have you known them or any of them, declare the truth. 2. Item—doe you knowe that Sir Thomas Reresby Knt. deceased and Dame Mary his wife possessed originally Ashover estate &c 3. Item—doe you knowe or have you credibly herd that the said George Hodgkinson for & in consideration of one hundred pounds of currant money of England to him paid by Sir John Peashall about XVIteen yeares since by his deed sufficient in lawe did graunt and assigne the said messuage and landes and all his estate and tearm therein unto the said Sir John Peashall &c. 4. Item—doe you knowe or have you credibly herd by what means the said Willm Harris gott into his hands the said originall lease made by the said Sir Thomas Reresby and Dame Mary his wife unto the said Hodgkinson and the said deed of Assignment and the provision of the said terme of 21 yeares And by what indirect course did he gett the possession of the said messuage and lands? declare the truth upon your oath &c.

To the Right Hon. Lord Weston, Lord Tres. of England. By virtue of his Majesties Commissions and instructions hereunto annexed when compounded .....for not taking knighthood and for issuing by the tax. Sir John Peshall, Baronet, £50 0s. 0d. [S. P. Temp. Charles I., Book 2, page 21.]

The King had learned that attendance upon the services of the established church was the open declaration of loyalty to the reigning King, so his officers were very jealous of those who failed to obey the law against recusancy, whether they were friends or foes. Hence in the year 1626 when Sir John Peshall had omitted to attend the church at Eccleshall, he was reported at headquarters and was summoned, and July 13th, 1626, we find him making the following petition.—‘To the King’s most Excellent Mat’ie, The humble petition of Sr. John Peshall Barronett, Humbly sheweth that your Majestie’s petitioner at the last assizes in the county of Staff. was indicted of Recusancie, howe forasmuch as your petitioner was at the Church within the time of offence supposed in the said Indictment, and was ever all his lifetime and now is a person that duly goeth to church and in every way conform to your laws in that behalf established, as may appear by the Certificate and affidavit hereunto annexed; and forasmuch also as the said proceedings were unduly had against him by some who prefer their own end therein rather than your Majesty’s service. And forasmuch also as your petitioner is now here near London in a Course of physick for reparation of his

health and cannot possibly attend the Assizes now at hand to make his clear defence there, And otherwise Conviction will ensue to his great dishonor and prejudice.

Humbly prayeth your Majesty out of your wonted princely sense of such abuses to your obedient subjects to give direction unto ye Justices of that Circuit that the same Indictment may be discharged and no further proceedings had thereon. And Your petitioner will pray &c. [State Papers, Domestic, Charles I., vol. 21, No. 68.]

The certificate referred to is the following:—William Iremonger gent. maketh oath that Sir John Peshall Baronet (who as he heard was indicted at the last Assizes held for the county of Stafford for not going to Church) did usually go to the Church before the framing of the said Indictment and there hath heard divine service. And further that he hath heard and verily believeth that the said Sir John was at his parish Church at Eccleshall within the time of absence in the said Indictment supposed. Jur. xiiij Julie 1626 Ro: Richs.

A further certificate transcribed in Domestic State Papers, vol. xxv, 1625, (Charles I), reads as follows: Certificate of Francis Rowley, Vicar of Eccleshall for 17 years, that Sir John Peshall, indicted for not going to Church, had come to church for the time aforesaid as an obedient subject ought to.

It is an interesting fact that the most rabid recusants were often the parents of the strongest protestants, and the reverse was also quite frequently true. How far this was caused by the exigencies of political necessity and how much of it was religious principle will never be known. Those in authority must perforce be loyal to the King, hence they must support the established church, and the King's officers were on the alert to suppress those who followed after the clergy of the Roman Pope. The friend of Sir John Peshall, Sir Walter Aston, was an ardent office holder, who as a justice of the peace kept a sharp eye on the directors of the Jesuit strongholds of Staffordshire—Alton, Aston Hall, Biddulph, Boscobel, Moseley, Stafford, St. Thomas, (near Stafford), Swinnerton, and Wolverhampton. In the last-named town, the fathers had become so numerous and so influential that the place was known as Roma Parva, or Little Rome. [Hist. Studies relating to Staffordshire, by John Law Cherry and Hart Cherry, Stafford, 1908.]

Here Mr. Levison, or Leuson, kept a large school which a few years later was made the subject of a raid. Mr. Levison and his pupils were apprehended and sent to London, and the house ransacked. Many Catholic books were seized, and a chest containing sacred vessels. Several reminders of that raid are preserved among the Domestic State Papers. They consist of draft letters in the handwriting of Sir John Coke, addressed to the kinsfolk of the juvenile delinquents. As an example, the following is the note that was sent to Sir John Persall, of Horsley, Staffordshire:—Whereas, John Stanford, son of William Stanford, of Perry Hall, in the County of Stafford, Esquire, being about (MS. torn) years of age, was lately found among other children at the house of Mr. Leuson in the county aforesaid, where he was trained up as a scholar under a Priest or Jesuit. In regard of his nearness in blood, he being your grandchild, we have thought fit to put him into your hands for the present, praying and requiring you to keep him in your custody until further orders shall be taken for

his education, &c. Dated at the Court of Whitehall, 9 Dec. 1635. Signed Lo. Archp. of Cant. Lo Keeper Mr. Secy. Coke.

Hence it would appear that while many gave an open compliance with the law yet secretly they supported the Catholic clergy. Charles was now King of England yet he occupied an anomalous position as his leanings were toward the Catholic Church; and always and everywhere, at this time, it came to pass that families were hopelessly divided upon this religious-political question. The authorities were not always lenient with those who disobeyed the laws of the land.

Then followed very sorrowful days for the English King during three years of civil warfare which began in 1642, and after the battle of Naseby, June 15, 1645, the King was compelled to seek refuge in the Scottish camp, from which he was delivered up to the Parliamentary party of England. Then began three more years of great unhappiness for the king and his supporters. In the meantime on Jan. 13, 1646, Sir John Peshall died, and was buried in the chancel of Eccleshall church.

An interesting transcript from an old MS. in the Huntetbach collection at the Salt Library gives the Insignia Johan Peshall of Horseley in Hundred of Pirehill, qui creatus erat Baronettus, (who had been created Baronet) Nov. 25th, 1611. A colored reproduction of the Peshall arms and crest is given, together with the following transcript from the MS., which was evidently much worn or mutilated: Firmly adhering to the late King Charles in his greatest distresses, was .....A lamentable thing it is to see an ancient family so rent to pieces and the last to be so wronged with desert.....hereby disabled to maintain the hospitality and reputation of his ancestors. That families have their times and perish is we know most certain, yet wretched and vile are they by whom such disastrous accidents are wrought. [Staff. Hist. Col., John Huntetbach, vol. i, Salt. Col. MS.]

After the battle of Naseby, through the changes in the political fortunes of the house of Stuart, the Catholic Church became the place of attendance by those who remained loyal to their king; hence we find that amongst the Roman Catholic Landowners, 1648, appears the name of Lady Anne, widow; relict of Sir John Pershall of Horsley and daughter of Ralph Seldon of Beoly, co. Worcester. Among the names of those who were sequestered in Nantmeil, County Chester, for adherence to King Charles and for non-conformity to the Presbyterian Covenant of uniformity, appears the name of John Persall on March 8, 1644/5. Sir John Peshall was among the prisoners who were sent to Nantwich, Chester. [Catholic Record Soc., page 187. Staff. Hist. Col., vol. 1915, page 390.]

But through it all the Peshalls were staunch supporters of the Virginia Colony, and likewise were their relatives by marriage, as witness that Mr. Selden the father-in-law of Sir John Peshall was on the committee appointed August 14, 1622, any four of which are entreated to meet and advise about the drawing up of the Patent touching the contract to be made with His Majesty for the sole importation of tobacco as also to take upon their consideration those things that are to be performed before the said contract is to be in force, as namely, the prohibiting the planting of tobacco in England and Ireland, and to prohibit the importing of any Spanish tobacco, more than the quantity limited by this contract.

By this time Edmund Pearsall was out of the tobacco business but the family made an effort to hold on to the monopoly and Mr. Seldon was no doubt in their committee for that purpose. The records also disclose how very close was Sir John Pershall's connection with the tobacco industry. [Records of the Virginia Company, vol. 2, page 98.]

Another of the marriage connections of the Pershalls, namely, the Throgmortons, were actual settlers in Virginia, as Robert Throckmorton of Virginia patented 300 acres in Charles County, Virginia, then including Gloucester at the White Marsh, August 24, 1637, (and was himself a head-right) and 600 acres on the west side of Nausemond River, in 1644.

According to the New York Records, October 2, 1642, John Throgmorton and associates obtained permission to settle within nine miles of the Manhattans. Prior to this time he was located in Virginia, as the Calendar of Dutch Manuscripts under the date of July 7, 1644, contains the declaration of Peter Jansen that he was told by Mr. Meddeler on the River Rappahanock in 1643, that the bark belonging to Mr. Throgmorton and Peter Lowrens was the property of Sir Edmund Pleydoen, Knt. At this time (1643) the Jansens and Pearsalls were associated in the settlement of Dutch-Englishmen on that part of Long Island belonging to New Netherlands. In a court proceeding of 1644 is the case of Moore vz. Spuser, attachment on a bark belonging to Peter Louresen and Mr. Throgmorton; Lauresen is condemned to deliver the bark to Spyser agreeably to the power of attorney, on condition that the latter gives security for the value of the vessel in case Mr. Moore hereafter proves that the owner is indebted to him when the money must be returned.

From the Calendar of Land Papers it appears that July 6, 1643, a patent was issued to John Throgmorton for part of Vreland, being half a league along the East River as by the map and survey thereof may appear. This was afterwards known as Throgmorton's Neck, Westchester. Sir William Throckmorton was a member of the Second Virginia Company. And as further emphasizing the interdependence of all these families in connection with the parts they severally played in the founding of the Virginia Colony it is well to recall that Elizabeth Throckmorton, who was a maid of honor to Queen Elizabeth, married Sir Walter Raleigh, a marriage which brought upon both husband and wife the royal disfavor.

Sir John Peshall left a very interesting family of children and as they also had more or less dealings with the Virginia Colony we shall give an outline of their family history before proceeding to the next generation.

The will of Sir John Peshall is still preserved at Somerset House, and reads as follows:—In the Name of God Amen I, Sir John Peshall of Sugnall in the countie of Stafford Baronett beinge in good health of bodie and of perfect memorie (thankes be given to God) therefore consideringe the vncertaintie of this mortall life and that it is a certain & positive lawe that everie man must die I leave therefore this present sixteenth daie of Aprill in the seaventeenth yeare of the raigne of our soveraigne Lord King Charles of England Scotland France and Ireland Defender of the Faith & etc And in the yeare of our Lord God One thousand six hundred fortie and one; made and ordained this my last will and testament in manner and forme followinge givinge to Allmightie God all possible thanks that hee hath spared mee soe long and given mee soe large a time of repentance and soe greates a space of time to settle and dispose of my worldlie estate that I maie with more quietnes of minde prepare my selfe for that life which is to come I doe therefore first of all com-

mend my soule to the handes of Allmightie God from whome I receaved the same and my bodie to the earth to be buried without anie great solemnitie in the Chancell of the Parishe Church of Eccleshall in the said countie of Stafford as neere to the bodie of Thomas Peshall Esquier my deceased father as maie bee And concerninge the disposition of my lands hereafter menconed I doe give and devise to my noble friend the kinsman Sir Thomas Holt of Ashton in the Countie of Warwicke Knight and Baronet, to my verie loveinge kinsman William Sheldon of Bewly in the countie of Worcester Esquier, nephew to Dame Anne Peshall my deerellie beloved wife and Thomas Ashton to the Inner Temple London Esquier All my messuages landes tenements and hereditaments whatsoever with their and everie of their apourtenances situate lieinge and being in the countie of Salop excepting all my lands tenements and hereditaments in Chazardine and Galson in the said countie of Salop whereof or where in I doe stand seized of anie estate of inheritance in fee simple

To have and to hould the said messuages lands tenements and hereditaments with all and everie their appurtenances whatsoever except before excepted to the said Sir Thomas Holt, William Sheldon and Thomas Ashton there heires and assignes for ever to the vses intents and purposes hereafter menconed that is to say To the vse and behoofe of John Peshall my third sonne for and duringe the term of his naturall life And after his decease then to the vse and behoofe of John Peshall my grand childe, sonne and heire to Thomas Peshall Esquier deceased mine eldest sonne after the time hee shall accomlishe the full age of twentie and one yeares and not before and of the heire males of his bodie lawfullie begotten And for default of sich issue then to the vse and behoofe of Sir William Peshall Knight my second sonne and of the heire males of his bodie lawfullie begotten and for default of such issue Then to the vse and behoofe of John Peshall my third soone and of the heire males of his bodie lawfully begotten And for want of such issue Then to the vse and behoofe of Roberte Peshall my fourth sonne and of the heire males of his bodie lawfully begotten And for default of such issue then to the vse, of mee the said Sir John Peshall and my heires for ever. Item I doe give and devise to the said Sir Thomas Holt William Sheldon and Thomas Ashton their heires and assignes for ever All my mannors messuages landes tenementes and hereditaments whatsoever with their and everie of their appurtenances situate lieinge and beinge in the countie Palatine of Chester whereof I am seised of anie estate of inheritance in fee simple and are not mentioned to bee intayled in or by the indenture of marriage of the said Thomas Peshall deceased my eldest sonne To the intent and purpose that they the said Sir Thomas Holt William Sheldon and Thomas Ashton and the survivor of them shall and will out of the rents issues and profits thereof yearelie paie allowe or cause to bee paid the yearelie rents or sumes of fortie poundes of lawfull money of England Att the feast of the Annunciacon of our Ladie Saint Marie the Virgin and of Saint Michael the Archangell which shall first happen next after my decease to the said Roberte Peshall my fourth sonne for and duringe the terme of his natural life And after his decease to the vse and behoofe of the said John Peshall my grand child after such time as he shall accomlishe the full age of twentie and one yeares and not before and of the heire males of his bodie lawfullie begotten And for default of such issue to the vse and behoofe of the said Sir William Peshall Knight and his heires for ever Item I doe giue & bequeath and devise to Sir William Peshall Knt all my messuages lands tenements & hereditaments whatsoever with their and everie of their appurtenances situate lieinge and beinge in Buttertorn Grinne Grindon and Little Birchford or in anie of them within the Countie of Stafford to the said Sir William Peshall Knight and to the heires males of his body lawfullie begotten and for default of such issue then to the right heires of mee the said Sir John Peshall for ever Item I give and bequeath to the said Sir William Peshall Knight all my new hangings wich I latelie bought for the hanginge of the Gallery at Sugnall which is over

the kitchin Item I devise to my deerelie beloved wife all my coppiehold land for and duringe the terme of her naturall life the remainder to the said John Peshall my grand child and his heires for ever. Item I doe give devise and bequeath vnto the sume of two thousand pound of lawfull money of England for their portion to bee equallie divided amongst them out of my lands conteyned in a deed made att the marriage of the said Thomas Peshall my eldest sonne deceased accordinge to the limitacon and power reserved and given mee by the said Indenture Prouidel allwaies and itt is the true intent and meaninge of mee the said Sir John Peshall in and by this my last will and testament That if the said John Peshall my grand child shall or doe att anie time or times hereafter indeavour attempt or goe aboute to impeach overthrow destroy or make voide anie lease or leases demise or demises heretofore made to any tennt or tennantes of any messuages lands or tenements conteyned or expressed in the said indentures of marriage of the said Thomas Peshall my eldest sonne deceased and which was or were heretofore made by Thomas Peshall my late father deceased or by mee the said Sir John Peshall or not suffer anie such to whome I have made and devise quietlie to enjoye the same That then the said John Peshall my grandchild shall not have taken receive or make anie manner of proutt benefitt gaine or advantage by this my last will and testament or by anie guift devise or bequeath therein expressed or mentioned but shalbee whollie excluded and barred thereof for ever And that then for soe much as is by this my last will and testament menconed limited or intended for or to the benefitt vse or behoofe of the said John Peshall my grand child. I doe give devise and bequeath to the said Sir William Peshall my second son and to his heires for ever. Concerning all the rest of my goodes and chattells leases for yeares and lives whatsoever and not given devised or disposed of by this my last will and testament nor assigned over nor given or granted by mee by anie acte or deed in my lifetime I doe give and devise to the said Sir Thomas Holt, William Sheldon and Thomas Aston Item I doe make ordaine constitute and appointe the said Sir Thomas Holt, William Sheldon and Thomas Aston my true & lawfull Executors of this my last will and testament And for their paines to bee taken therein I doe give to everie of them the summe of tenn poundes of currant English money for the further testimonie of my love and affection towards them. And I doe make and appointe the right honourable my truelle much honoured freind Walter Lord Aston Overseer of this my last will and testament in wittnes whereof and that this is my last will and testament I have subscribed my name vnto and on the side of each leafe it containinge but two leaues and have putt my seale vpon the file of this my last will and testament the daie and yeare first above written—John Peshall—Signed sealed and published in the sight and presence of these persons whose names are subscribed—Charles Peshall Thomas Sadler—The marke of Richard Turner. Proved 17th February 1646. Fos. 22 Ob. Heb. 22-Fines.

Sir John's wife, Anne, had died before him on March 30th, 1613, and was also buried at Eccleshall.

Q. ELIZABETH PESHALL, born March 20, 1593; married William Scott of the Moate in Canwell, Sussex, son of Edward Scott. Children:—\*1. Thomas Scott, aged 18 in 1634. \*2. William Scott. \*3. Edmund Scott. \*4. Elizabeth Scott. \*5. Katherine Scott. \*6. Mary Scott. [Visitation of Sussex, 1633-4, page 30.]

The family of Scott had a very interesting connection with American early colonial history. Joseph Scott was a property owner in Hempstead, in 1656, and came from the Middleburgh settlement on Long Island. [William and Mary College Quarterly, vol. 3, page 49. Visitation of Sussex, 1633-34, Harl. Mss., page 50.]

At the meeting of the general court of Connecticut in October, 1662, Capt. John Coe, deputed by Middleburgh, and others from the several English towns on Long Island, proceeded to Hartford and presented petitions to be received to the protection and privileges of that colony, seeing it hath pleased the Highest Majesty to move the heart of the King's Majesty to grant unto your colony such enlargements as comprehends this whole island, thereby opening a way for us (as we hope) from our present bondage, to such liberties and enlargements as we are informed your patent affords. Agreeably to their

request the court declared that as the lines of their patent extended to the adjoining islands, they accepted those towns under their jurisdiction. [Annals of Newtown, page 58.]

Middleburgh was now in allegiance to King Charles II. In the ardor of their loyalty they discarded the name by which the township from its settlement had been designated and adopted that of Hastings, after a town in Sussex, England, distinguished in history as the scene of the famous victory of William the Conqueror, by which that monarch obtained the throne of Britain. Encouraged by the prospective growth and prosperity of the settlement, the inhabitants gave themselves early in the winter to matters of public convenience. All persons were required to make good sufficient fence where their share is to do it, and that by the first day of the ensuing March, upon forfeit of half a crown, for every rod of



fence defective. Four individuals were chosen fence viewers, which is the first notice we have of this not very distinguished but highly necessary office. Two common fields, each a single enclosure, in which the villagers proposed unitedly to plough and plant, were directed to be laid out, one on the north and the other on south of the village lots, which matter was entrusted to four persons, one of whom was James Christie, who had obtained his liberation from the prison of Fort Amsterdam. [Annals of Newtown, page 59.]

The people of Hastings were in the meanwhile not devoid of apprehensions. Stuyvesant having consented to a proposition of Connecticut, by which the jurisdiction of both provinces over the English on the west end of Long Island was suspended, these towns were left by this arrangement without a head to look to. They thereupon invited Capt. John Scott of Setauket, a person of great influence, to come and settle their government. On his arrival, Hastings and four other towns entered into a combination, Jan. 4, 1664, to manage their own affairs irrespective of Connecticut, until a government should be established among them by his Majesty of England, who they were told by Capt. Scott, had granted Long Island to the Duke of York. [Annals of Newtown, page 60-61.]

On the fourth of February ensuing, the inhabitants of Hastings met for the transaction of important business. They drew up and signed a compact, in which they set forth the grounds of their allegiance to England, with their determination to defend to any extremity the interests of their royal master, King Charles II. It ran as follows: To all Christian People in all parts of the world, know that we, the inhabitants of Hastings, otherwise called Middleburg, on Long Island, in the south part of New England, do declare that we are by our birthright privileges subjects of his Majesty, Charles the 2<sup>d</sup>. of England, Scotland, France and Ireland, King; and within the discoveries of his Royal predecessors are providentially seated; and by right of the natives, have to the soil an absolute right of inheritance in free socage, to us and

our heirs and assigns for ever, which right, interest and property, with his Majesty's Royalty of government, we promise to maintain against any usurpers whatsoever, and will further and more particularly do any thing whereby or wherewith our dread sovereign and successors may be owned as absolute Emperor in point of civil judicatur, as by establishing an authority elected by the major part of the freeholders of this town of Hastings aforesaid, yearly; this very Island being bounded within the letters patent granted by King James, of glorious memory, the 18th year of his reign, to George, Duke of Buckingham, James, Duke of Lennox, which patent was bounded between 40 and 48 north latitude with all islands, and within the said latitude we say our just propriety of soil being invaded, and his Majesty's rights usurped by ye Hollanders; to the great scandal of government and discouragement of his Majesty's hopeful plantation, which we will for the future defend as Englishmen, just proprietors and loyal subjects, with our lives and fortunes; in witness whereunto we have set our hands this 4th of February, 1663 (1664, new style) (Under the Dutch, the mode of reckoning time in this town was after the New Style. Now the Old Style, which was in use among the English, was introduced, according to which the year was understood to commence in the 25th of March, and the month began ten (and on and after March 1st, 1700, eleven) days earlier than the new style. That year began on Jan. 1st; and on Sept. 3d. following, the old style ended, the next day being considered the 14th New Style.)

All the inhabitants, with a few exceptions, attached their signatures to this high-toned instrument. James Way, Jonathan Hazard, William Lawrence, Samuel Moore, did not subscribe. The town proceeded to ballot for a president for the ensuing year, and Capt. John Scott, Esquire received their unanimous vote for that office. [See also History of New England, by John Gorham Palfrey, vol. 2. Note on page 564 et seq. which speaks fully of this John Scott.]

In the records of the Virginia Company it appears that George Scott transferred 3 shares to Patrick Copland, February 27, 1621, which were passed and admitted in 1623. He was a member of the Council 1623. He was a member of a committee to take into consideration touching the farming of tobacco in Virginia by a private venture of the English owners of the Company. He was evidently a directing force in the Virginia Company. George Scott, Edmund Scott and Thomas Scott were members of the Second Virginia Company.

\*R. ANNE PESHALL, born July 23, 1594; married Sir Richard Fleetwood, Bart. They resided at Colwich Hall, Staffordshire. Children:—\*1. Sir Thomas Fleetwood. \*2. Richard Fleetwood, who died without issue. \*3. William Fleetwood, living 1663. \*4. Robert Fleetwood, married a daughter of M. Coleman of Canok in Staffordshire. \*5. Henry Fleetwood, married Agatha, daughter of Thomas Giffard of Plardick, Staff. and died 1689. She died 1692. \*6. Mary Fleetwood, died without issue. \*7. Elizabeth Fleetwood, married — Broughton. [Rev. John Peshall's Notebook.] \*8. Dorothy Fleetwood married Thomas, Barnfield. In the records of the Abbey of our Lady of Consolation of Cambria, 1620-1793, it appears under date of September 5, 1653—Entered Mistress Dorothy Fleetwood, aged 27. She is gone away. She was the youngest daughter of Richard Fleetwood of Colwich Hall, County Stafford, 1st Baronet, by Anne daughter of Sir John Pershal of Horsley, County Stafford, 1st Baronet. She became the second wife of Thomas Barnfield. Child:—James Barnfield, aged 4 in 1663. [Catholic Record Society, vol. 8, page 48.]

Ellaston Parish Register, 1599-1600, January 31. Mr. Richard Fleetwood and Ann Persall married.

Among the Roman Catholic Landowners, 1648, is the name of Sir Richard Fleetwood, Bart. of Wootton and Colerich obit 1649, husband of Ann, daughter

of Sir John Peshall of Horseley and Eccleshall. [Staff. Hist. Col., vol. 1915, page 390.]

Sir William Fleetwood and Edward Fleetwood Esq. were members of the Virginia Company.

Sir Richard Fleetwood, son of Thomas Fleetwood of Caldwick, Esq., and Mary daughter of Sir Richard Sherborne of Stonehurst, co. Lanc. knight. This Sir Richard Fleetwood of Caldwick, Bart, created June 29, 1611; died in Anno 1649. He married Anne, daughter of Sir John Pershall in co. Staff. Bart. died anno. 1650. [*Ibid.*, vol. 5, part 2, page 130.]

\*S. JANE PESHALL, born August 10, 1597, married Richard Calvert, Esq of Corkesham, County of Stafford. There appears to be some uncertainty as to the Calvert pedigree, but following the note book of Rev. John Peshall, Brown's Maryland, 1914, and G. E. Cockayne's complete Peerage, vol. 2, 1912, we get the following, which is also well supported by the family history of the Peshall, Pearsall, Calvert and Brent families, so far as the same run in the same channels in England and America. The marriage of Cecil Calvert to an Arundel connects their joint family history with the previous history of the Pershall family in Staffordshire. The chart of Calvert reads as follows.

Leonard Calvert—Alicia daughter and Heiress of John Crosland of Crosland.					
Sr George Calvert, Knt born at Kypling in Yorkshire Secretary of State to James ye 1st, K. of England. By him created Ld Baron of Baltimore in Ireland. First Ld Proprietor of Avelon in America. Granted him in 1623. Died 1632. Aged 53. And was buried att St Dunstan's in ye west.			Ann, daughter t c George Mynne of Hertingfordbury in Com. Hertford. Died August 1622.		
7. Richard—Jane Pershall	2. Leonard	1. Cecil Calvert, Son and	Ann his wife, 2d daughter of	Ann	
	3. George	Heire Ld Baltimore. To	ye Ld Arundell of Wardour,	Dorothy	
	4. Francis	whom Maryland was	and Count of ye Sacred Ro-	Elizabeth	
	5. Henry	granted, June 20, 1632.	man Empire by web all her de-		
	6. Philip		sendants, Male and Female,		
			are Counts and Countesses.		
Charles, Lord Baltimore Son and Heire. Married four wives: died Feb. 20, 1715, buried att St. Pancras near London, aged 77.			1. . . . Darnall, died in Childbed.	Elizabeth	Ann
			2. Jane Seawell, Widow, by whom he had . . .		
			3. Mary Banks, widow.		
			4. Margaret Charleton who survived him.		
Benedict Leonard, Lord Baltimore, was born March 21, 1679, died Apl. 16, 1715, aged 37. And was buried att. Epsome, in Surry. Married Jan. 2, 1698/9 to			Charlotte, daughter to Edward Henry Earl of Litchfield &c. and Charlott his wife, daughter of K. Charles II'd by Barbara, Dutchess of Cleveland.	Cecil Eldest but died young	1. Jane 2. Ann
4. Cecil, twin with his Eld-est Sister Charlott, Born Nov. 1702.	3. Edward Henry Born Aug. 31, 1701. Un-married.	2. Benedict Leonard, born Sept. 20, 1700. Now of Xt church Oxon. Unmarried.	1. Charles, Eld-est, Lord Balte-more. Unmar-ried. Born Sept. 29, 1699.	1. Charlott married to Mr. Brere-wood.	2. Jane born Nov. 1703. 3. Barbara born Oct. 3, 1704.
					Unmarried.

Charles Calvert was also interested in the plot laid to him and others by Titus Oates which will be found to be quite extensively referred to in relating the history of the Pershall family of Horsley with which our interest is at this moment more directly interested.

\*T. MARGARET PESHALL, born Aug. 13, 1598; married 1622 Richard Brent, Esq., of Stoke, co. Gloucester. They resided at Larksloke, Gloucestershire, and Kilmington Parish, Warwickshire. Children: \*1. Robert Brent, married Catherine —, executor to his father, will dated 19 Nov., 1693, will proved 24 Oct., 1695. The following grant is mentioned in Hotten's Our Emigrant Ancestors, 28 Feb. Grant to Robert Brent of all wrecks, &c. in or upon any of the Rocks, Shelves, seas, or banks, on or near the coast of America between the Bermudas and Porto Rico or between Cartagena and the Havanna; 4 Jas. II. (1689). \*2. Frances Brent, died Dec. 20, 1656; \*3. Mary Brent, died April 3,

1657; \*4. Katherine Brent, born May 7, 1639; \*5. Elizabeth Brent, died July 14, 1656; \*6. Giles Brent, died before 1666; \*7. Margery Brent, married Thomas Bartlett of Evesham and had Richard and other children.

A memorial tablet in Illmington Church, Warwickshire, says that of the above named children, Frances, Mary, Elizabeth and Giles lye buried there anno 1657. [Virginia Historical Magazine, re Brent genealogy.]

The association of the Brents and Pearsall and Peshalls in England and America had an important bearing upon the family history. The reader is urged to read the Brent Genealogy which appears in Chapter 27, Section 2.

\*U. DOROTHY PESHALL, born Nov. 3, 1603; married William Stanford (Staunford), of Perry Hall, Warwickshire; died August 7, 1640. Children:—  
\*1. John Stanford of Handsworth, born 1624; died 1663, aged 39; married Ursula, daughter of William Chapman of Brekelton, co. Berks. The Stanfords were Catholics and hence they, along with their co-religionists, were objects of watchful anxiety to the Protestants who were already started upon the series of events which led to the Commonwealth under Parliament and Cromwell. Among the more active of the Protestants was Sir William Aston of Tixall Hall in Staffordshire, who, as a justice of the Peace, kept a sharp eye on the directors of the Jesuit stronghold in Wolverhampton where the fathers had become so numerous and so influential that the place was known as Roma Parva, or Little Rome. Here a Mr. Levinson had a large school which a few years later was made the subject of a raid, at which time John Standford, son of William Standford, in the County of Stafford, Esquire, was found and apprehended as studying under a priest; he was remanded to the custody of Sir John Peshall as we have already related in the subdivision of this chapter and section relating to him. \*2. Edward Stanford, born 1619; married circa 1637, Dorothy, daughter of — Southcot of Mesthum, co. Surrey, who died 1663, aged 44. His children were:—1. William Stanford; 2. John Stanford; and 3. Mary Stanford. He was of full age a week before his father's death in August, 1640. He was married about 1637. He occupied Perry Hall on the Taine in Staffordshire which had been in his family for several generations. He was loyal to the King and a Catholic, hence he was in trouble with the Parliamentary Government concerning which the records disclose: January 13, 1644. Whereas the lands of Edward Stanford, esq. within the countye of Stafford, are sequestered for the use of the king and parliament, he being a recusant, and in armes against them; yet upon Mrs. Dorothy Sandford his wife's petition for mayntenance out of the said lands, it is agreed by and between the committee at Stafford and her, that Francis Erpe, of Lynn, gent. and Thomas Jordan, of Perrie Barr, yeoman, shall lett the said lands for the best use of a fifth part, whereof, bothe of the proffits of the demesne and tenants rents, the committee do order shall be payd to the said Mrs. Standford, and the rest to the treasurer at Stafford, for the states use; and because the said Mrs. Standford is destitute of a house, it is ordered that she shall have the hall called Perrie Barr hall, and two closes called Pale close and Broomie leasowe, upon such rent as Mr. Erpe and Thomas Jordan shall agree upon, which is to be accounted as parcell of the fifth part of the proffits of the demesnes allowed her. And the said Mrs. Standford dothe undertake to secure the said Mr. Erpe from

any daunger or molestation of the king's partie, and the committee do undertake the same from the parliament forces. [History of Staffordshire, by Rev. Stebbins Shaw, vol. 2, London 1798, page 109.] He was a colonel for the king in 1645, and in 1646 took the covenant that he might compound. \*3. Dorothy Collett Stanford. In the Records of the English Cannonneses of the Holy Sepulchre at Liege, appears the following:—Anno dni 1649, 6mo, made her holy profession, Dorothy Collett Stanford, aged 20 years. She was the second daughter of William Stanford of Perry Hall, Co. Stafford, England, and his wife Dorothy, daughter of Sir John Peshall of Horsley Hall, co Staff. Ist Bart. [Catholic Record Society, vol. 9, page 78.]

\*V. CATHERINE PESHALL, born June 2, 1605; married James Pool, Esq. of Urrhall, Chester. The family of Pool was interested in the Pearsall-Peshall American venture. Oct. 20, 1617, a commission was issued by the Virginia Company to Captain Nathaniel Pool, to be Sergeant Major General. The Pools were members of the Middleburg, Long Island Colony; one of the family one year had the Flock Herding Privileges for Hempstead, as witness the following from the Hempstead Town Records: The Townesmen for this present yeare under written have Covenant and Agreeede to and with William Poole whoe is to keepe the heard of Calves belonging to ye towne of Hemsteede for this present yeare, And is to keepe to ye Nomb'r of Ninety Calves the w'ch shall bee inlisted by the towne-clerk, And is to goe out w'th them at ye appointment of ye townesmen and to Continew with his charge untill the townesmen shall see it fitting to release him. He is allsoe to be carefull of his charge in all particulers conformable to the Articles of Agreement made w'th George Huylet as before is specified & to make it his full imployment to attend his charge, And in Concideracon of his Laboure he is to be paid the some of fowerteene shillings Six pence the weecke from ye time of his going out w'th his heard untill he shalbe discharged; And his payments shalbe made in butter for Each Calfe in ye herd one pound of butter, and 12d in wampum, and ye remainder to be paid at or before the 15th day of february Next Insueing the date hereof, and he to goe out ye first Sabbath and afterwards each 4th Sabbath, the Corne w'ch he shall receive is to be paid him in Indian and wheate of each his halfe Qrter payment, the wheate at 5s. ye bushell and ye Indian Corn at 3s. per bushell, whereunto both parties have subscribed the day & yeare above written. William Poole, Lawrence Ellison, Tho. Langdon, Will. Yeates, Ed Titus, Tho. Foster. It was the fine pasturage on the Hempstead plains that first induced the settlement of that town on Long Island. It was many years before the settlers had fenced and farmed their lands so that during all this time the care of their herds was an important occupation entrusted only to the most trustworthy. [Hempstead Town Records, vol. 1, page 79.]

\*W. JOHN PESHALL, born July 12, 1606, married Bridget Knightley daughter of Robert Knightley of Offchurch. Child:—\*1. Mary Peshall who married ——— Ravenal.

1638, June 19. Petition of John Persall, son of Sir John Persall, to the King. Petitioner about 15 years since married the daughter of Robert Knightley, who in that space has not, until within three years past, given unto her 10 pounds, towards her maintenance in apparel, since which time he has given unto her £24

per annum, a means very insufficient in discharging her very diet. For which cause petitioner is enforced to supply that particular out of his own means, being but £50 per annum, an amount also very insufficient, as also to defray charges of nurses, maintenance of children and service wages, which charge for surmounting petitioner's present estate, the said Robert suffers, having before and since petitioners marriage boasted that he would give 3,000 pounds with his daughter, so that petitioner might have estated upon 300 pounds per annum, which petitioner's father cannot do, but offers in present and reversion 200 pounds per annum. Further, this unnatural conduct of petitioner's father-in-law towards his daughter has drawn on her such inconveniences that without speedy relief her life cannot avoid imminent danger. Prays reference to the Council to order this difference. [State Papers, Domestic, Charles I., vol. 323, page 315.]

His wife and children having died, John Pershall entered the priesthood and it appears that as Father John Persall he was at the House of the English Canonesses of the Holy Sepulchre of Liege in 1680. [Catholic Record Society, vol. 10, page 10.]

\*X. PHILIPPA PESHALL, born Sept. 1, 1607; married John Sulliard.

\*Y. ROBERT PESHALL, born December 2, 1608, is supposed to have become a priest. He is referred to in his father's will in such a manner as to show clearly that he neither had children nor was expected to ever have any posterity. The difficulty in proving the connection with the Catholic Church is that this family joined one of the religious orders of priesthood which changed the person's name when he was admitted thereto, hence, without some fortunate slip, it would not be possible to positively identify him. This family adopted the name of Harcourt when they entered the Society of Jesus and there were several of the name who could have been Pershall. He died without heirs.

\*Z. FRANCES PESHALL, born Aug. 20, 1609; married 1st. John Stamford, son of Charles Stamford of Handsworth, and his wife Eleanor Alderford, daughter of John Alderford of Salford, in Warwick. He died 1638. She married 2nd. Capt. Peter Blount, fourth son of Sir Walter Blount of Soddington, Bart. He was a captain at Worcester fight. In the Choir of St. Matthew, Salford Priors, Evesham, Worcester, is the tomb of John Stanford the inscription of which reads as follows:—*Hic jacet Iohannes Stanford de Abbot Salford, Armis, filius natu maximus Caroli Francifcam filiam Iohnnis Peshall de Horsley, in comitatu Staffordiae Baronetti. Obijt Noue: 19 Ao Dmni 1649. EATATIS 49.* Translated:—Here lies John Stanford of Abbot Salford, armiger, eldest natural son of Charles Stanford, armigr. who married Frances, daughter of John Peshall of Horsley, in the county of Stafford, Baronet. Died Nov. 19, anno domini 1649, aged 49. Children:—\*1. William Stanford, living at Rea Hall, 1660, of Salford 1664; married Dorothy Paston, daughter of William Paston of Appleton Hall and Barningham Hall, town of Barningham, Co. Norfolk, and Agnes his wife, daughter and coheir of William Everhard of Linsted, Co. Suffolk. \*2. Annie Stanford. The records of the English Canonesses of the Holy Sepulchre at Liege disclose that:—*Mistress Annie Stanford daughter of Mr. John Stanford and Mistress Annie Persall, born at Abbots Sanford (Salford) in the County of Warwickshire, took ye habit of religion on the 8th of September, 1650, clothed on the*

5th anne Teele of the Assumption, profest on the 16th of August, 1652, being then 21 years of age. She died on the 2nd of March, 1654. Requiescat in Pace. [Catholic Record Society, vol. 10, page 5.]

The will of John Sanford of Abbots Salford, Worcestershire, Esq. date October 10, 1639, probated February 9, 1649, by Edward Griffin names his widow Frances Stanford, Sir William Pershall, Knt. Thomas Stanford and Thomas Dighton. [Records of Prerogative Court of Canterbury, Pembroke 32. S. P. Dom. Charles I., vol. 323, page 315. Visitation of Warwickshire. Hist. of Staff., by Rev. Stebbins Shaw, vol. 2, London 1789, page 109.]

### SECTION 3, DIVISION C.

THOMAS PESHALL, Esq., son of Sir John Peshall, Bt., Chapter 26, Section 3, Division B, married Bridget, daughter of Sir William Stafford, Esq., of Blatherwick, co. Northampton, in Northamptonshire, Knight. he obiit vive patre. She was buried November 14, 1699. Children:—

1. Sir John Peshall, Bart, born Sept. 30, 1628; died 1701. Chapter 26, Section 3, Division E.
2. Bridget Peshall, born Sept. 23, 1623; married George W. Massey of Cheshire.
3. Ann Peshall, born Feb. 2, 1625; married Christopher Hawley, Esq. of Staff.
4. Elizabeth Peshall, born June 1, 1627; married Sir Robert Bosville of Bianne in Eccleshall.
5. Lettice Peshall, born Oct. 3, 1629; married John Barbour, gent. of Staffordshire.

On the Quindene of Easter, 18 James I. Between Thomas Breveton, knight, Thomas Pershall armiger, Thomas Leigh, armiger, William Breverton, armiger, and Robert Drokenfield, gentleman, complainants and Richard Egerton knight, deforciant of the manors of Dulverne otherwise Delhorne and Belfcotte and of 16 messuages, 8 cottages, 8 tofts, 1 mill, 2 gardens, 800 acres of land, 100 acres of meadow, 600 acres of pasture, 80 acres of wood, 400 acres of furze and heath, 200 acres of moor, 100 acres of turbery, and 30s. rent in Dulverne, otherwise Delhome, Beffcot, Fossebrooke, Fulford, Chedull, Audeley, Beggerhall, Hill Talke and Cowley. [Staff. Hist. Col., vol. 7, new series, page 213.]

In Eccleshall Church there existed at one time a tablet to the memory of Bridget Peshall, wife of Thomas Peshall. This had on it the arms of this lady in lozenge form with the Peshall quarterly of six on one side and her own family arms on the other. There still exists in the Chancel a large Prayer Book printed in the reign of James II. which has the following inscription on the title page: Gift of Bridget and Anne Pershall, 1686. These two are Bridget the wife of Sir Thomas Pershall, and their daughter Anne. Also, included in a Catalogue of Benefactors to this Church, hung up in the Vestry, is the following: Sir John Pershall of Horseley, Bart., being thereunto moved by Thomas Pershall, Esq., his father before his death, gave by deed pasturage for 16 cows for 16 poor householders of the Township of Eccleshall, yearly for ever. [Parshall Book, page 132.]

Chetwind in his History of Pirehill Hundred, County Stafford, says:—In ye 7th Jac. Tho. Peshall, Esqre, died seized of ye manors of Suggenhull, Aspeley, and Bps Offley, the manor, or Grange, of Horseley, Doreslaw farm, several lands

in Croxton, Slindon, High Offley, Eccleshall, Little Suggenhull, Bridgeford and Halughton, co. Staff. Divers messuages in Newport Chetwynd, Edgmond, Drayton, Cheswardine, and Norton, co. Sal.: Half ye manor of Lea, and ye third part of ye manor of Ashover, co. Derby, ye manor of Wistaston, with lands in Widenbury, Coton, Stapleford, Malpas, etc., co. Cestr.; leaving John, his son and heir, then 30 years of age; who 10 Jac. was advanced to ye dignity of a Bart. and afterward built that faire stone house now standing here, which hath ever since continued ye chief seat of that family, and is ye present residence of Tho. Peshall, Esqre., son and heir to Sir John Peshall, Bart., 1680.

### SECTION 3, DIVISION D.

SIR WILLIAM PERSHALL, son of Sir John Peshall Bt., Chapter 26, Section 3, Division B, married first Mary Thimbley, daughter and heir of Richard Thimbley of Irnham, County Lincolnshire, and his wife Mary Brooks of County Leicester. (The old records say that Richard Thimbley died at Mathew Tobys House in High Holborn and was buried in St Andrews, Holborn, February 2, 1622-3.) Sir William Pershall married second, Frances (Anne) Aston, daughter of Walter Lord Aston, Lord Forfar in Scotland, of Tixal, in Staffordshire. The records of the English Cannonesses of the Holy Sepulchre of Liege disclose that Mistress Ann Pershal came here October 9, 1658, and she is to pay £18 sterling a year the community being to find her in all things. [Catholic Record Society, vol. 10, page 181.] No children by the first marriage. Children of the second marriage:—

1. William Pershall, admitted to Grays Inn 1654, as the eldest son of Sir William Pershall, of Canwell. Married Dorothy ——. He was admitted a fellow of the Royal Society and died in 1663. [Musgroves Obituaries.] She died in July 1642.

Charles I, 1625-1649 Chancery Proceedings. Bundle 38. No. 43. Persal v Davil. Date—1648. The joynt and several answers of John Davil and Raphe Davil defendts to the Bill of Complaint of Sir William Persall, knight complaynant. The Lande & Tenements in the occupation of Dorothy Persall, widdowe who dyed in or about the month of July, 1642. after her decease were let by her assignes to the defendant John Davil by word of mouth for year to year as long as the defendant should like and think fitt in respect to the troubles of the time & his great sufferings—he gave ample notice to leave but the greatest part of the premises—the Board Aldermore, The Aldermore Close, the Brychen Close, Smarth Close & the Roughend were out of this defendants hands & in the holding & occupation of John Freeman.

See also Bundle 399. No. 234. Date 1658. Pearshall, Sir William knt. v Chevall, William. Subject Money. And Bundle 421—No. Date. 1667. Pershall, Sir William knt. v William Pargiber. Subject. Lichfield, Co. Stafford.

Child of William and Dorothy Pershall:—

1. Peter Pershall, the Records of the Catholic Record Society disclose that Rev. Peter Phillip alis Persel took the college oath at Douay April 12, 1690. He had been at Egtonbridge in 1741, and in 1743 went to Ley-

burn, coming to Ugthorpe about 1757, and died there November 23, 1761. Mr. Gillon describes him as a priest of the English college at Rome. [Catholic Record Society, vol. 9, page 329.]

2. John Pershall, who entered the Order of Jesus and preached two sermons before the King and Queen at the Savoy, was vice provincial of the English Jesuits in 1696. He joined his father and brothers when they took up arms in 1646, with other Roman Catholic Landholders, on behalf of the King. The Dictionary of National Biography says John Pershall alias Harcourt (1633-1702) born in Staffordshire of an ancient Catholic family. In 1694 he was declared Rector of the College of Liege, and appointed Vice Provincial of England in 1696. In 1701 he was missionary in the London District where probably he died in 1702. Two sermons he preached before James II. and his queen. The student will find the copy of one sermon in the library of Durham Cathedral and the other in the British Museum.

John Law Cherry and Hart Cherry in their Historical studies relating chiefly to Staffordshire [Stafford 1908, page 74] in telling the story of Tixall Hall and Titus Oates give the following from the testimony of Stephen Dugdale which relates to John Pershall, who was known as Harcourt. Whilst Harcourt [the Provincial of the Jesuits in England] was copying something in the house of Lord Aston, I had an opportunity, he affirmed on oath, of observing his handwriting. I next saw a letter which was written in his own hand, and was sent by the public letter-carrier to Every or Evers, a Jesuit [the chaplain at Tixall] instructing him to depute trusty and daring men—whether noble or commoners mattered not—to kill the king. I was very often present at deliberations on that affair, held in Every's chamber, when Gavan [a priest of Wolverhampton] delivered an address to the assembly, grounded upon divine matters of Scripture, which I do not remember, proving both the lawfulness and excellence of his action, and I was solicited to undertake the business myself.

John Harcourt als Pershall was innocent of any such conspiracy but in the excited state of the public mind this made no difference. So Lord Aston was arrested and lodged in Stafford goal. Father Ireland one of Lord Aston's guests was tried and executed, but John Harcourt als Pershall, did not receive any special punishment. Lord Aston remained a prisoner until 1685, when he was released. Dugdale also swore that Lord Stafford had promised him £500 if he would kill the King as that James, Duke of York, who was a Catholic, might succeed to the English throne, and said that this conversation took place at Tixall Hall. Stafford was found guilty and beheaded in 1680, although without any other basis of evidence against him than that the company at Tixall Hall desired to restore the Catholic religion as the state religion of England.

3. Margaret Peshale, married Richard Hanford, of Sufton, as his second wife.
4. Anne Peshale, married 1st. Theobald Taaffe, Earl of Carlinford in Ireland; 2nd. Randal Lord Dunfanny or Dunsany.
5. Gertrude Pershall. The record of the English Canonesses of the Holy Sepulchre of Liege discloses; Mistress Gertrude Persall, English, born in



Staffordshire, daughter of Sir William Persall and Mrs. Francis Aston, entered into religion the ninth day of October, 1651, and was admitted to her clothing on the twenty-second day of June, 1653, and was clothed the tenth of August. She had will to profert on the third day of July and was profert on the eleventh day of August of the same month, being seventeen years of age, anno 1655, and took the name of St Gertrude of St Cecilia, and died the sixth day of July 1665. [Catholic Record Society, vol. 10, page 6.]

William Pershall was admitted to Grays Inn in 1622. The records of Grays Inn say that he was second son of John Peshall of Horsley, Baronet. He was knighted in 1627. When he became a baronet he began to write his name Peshale.

John Barbour of Flashbrook, Esq., July 23, 1632, sold as administrator of his brother Humphrey decd., a rent charge of £20 per annum, secured on lands at Seighford, to Sir William Peshal, Knt. [Staff. Hist. Col., vol. 5, part 2, page 30.]

1632. Petition of Sir William Persall to the King. Petitioner being a younger brother and seised of no estate during his father's life was lately prosecuted by indictment of recusancy by one Farrington an informer. Prays his majesty to sign the annexed declaration and after his father's decease he will submit to composition. Memorandum that Petitioner having married a kinswoman of the late Countess of Buckingham, was knighted by her procurement to give her kinswoman the honor. An informer supposes him to be seised of an estate in respect of his title, but he is seised of nothing during his father's life after whose decease he will make the composition. [S. P. Dom., Charles I., vol. 229, No. 3.]

Oatland, Nov. 25th, 1634. The King's Treasurer and Chancellor of the Exchequer. Commissions for Recusant, judges of Assize & all other Officers. Having received good testimony of the loyalty and affections of Sir William Pearsall no indictment or suit is to be commenced or prosecuted against him for or concerning his recusancy. [S. P. Dom., Charles I., vol. 277, No. 91.]

Sir William Pershall recusant fined £604 15s. [History of Nantmeil in Cheshire, by James Hall, page 187.]

Sir William Peshale of Canwell, Staffordshire, and 2 sons,—Roman Catholics, took up arms for the king in the fight with Cromwell. [Staff. Hist. Col., vol. 6, new series, page 331.]

Dec. 15, 1646. Sir William Pershall Recusant, Canwell, co. Stafford. Order on an order in Parliament of 12 Dec. that his composition for delinquency not being perfected he may remain in town to perfect it. March 1647. John Hicks of the Taner Temple begs to compound for a lease for 2 lives of  $\frac{2}{3}$  of East Peon farm, co. Hants. rent £22 3s. 4d. The yearly value of above, the rest being £100 which he largely bought from Sir Wm. Pershall. [S. P. Dom. Comm. for Compounding G. 571.]

Roman Catholic Landowners, 1648. Lady Anne, widow (relict of William Pershall.) Sir Richard Fleetwood, Bart. of Wootton, (and Colerich ob. 1649), husband of Ann, daughter of Sir John Persall, Bart. of Horseley and Eccleshall. Sir William Pershall (of Canwell, husband of Frances daughter of Walter, first lord of Aston of Forfar). This is a very interesting list in view of the actions of these same parties when they were enjoying kingly favor; but these were the

days of the Commonwealth, and they had all gone back to the Roman church. [Staff. Hist. Col., vol. 1915, page 390-1.]

It is apparent from the record that Sir William Peshall was a very ardent Catholic. This is confirmed by Robert Pearsall of Middlesex, England, who writes, that as a member of the Survey Committee of London, I came across a letter written by him concerning Lady Rivers, (Elizabeth Scroope, married to the Earl in 1647) and the house in Queen Street, Long Acre, London, occupied by the Earl. Dated. 3 Oct. no yr. [Survey of London, vol. 5.] which reads—

Our Queen Street news is ill my Lady Rivers is in a very ill condition of health. Give me leave to render you the history of our Queen Street family, and the reason of the bill on the door, which I found at my coming up. They had intelligence that the constables were to come and present the names of all church absentees popishly affected; so they consulted in my absence, and resolved to set the bill on the door, and give it out my Lady Rivers was in the country, Sir Francis Patre in common garden (Covent Garden) out of the parish, Sir Will. Persall gone to live at his house in the country, none but the servants left; when every day half a dozen coaches come to visit us, and the baskets of meat as full as ever, and two or three brewers still carrying in ale and beer; and all for Tom Brown, who, poor man, is already half damn'd with telling of lies to all that come to inquire of us, as well friends as others. But they have given us in, as Tom Brown reported we had all gone except my Lady Mary (youngest dau. but one of the second Earl by his first wife) who is but fifteen, and so incapable to take the oath, and yet I hear they have taken our names again. [The Parish of St. Giles-in-the-Fields, Survey of London, vol. 5.]

Extract of a letter written by Anthony Windsor Esq. who died 1697. He was the son of Sir Edmund Windsor Knt. This Anthony Windsor was the son of Edward Windsor, who married Margaret the daughter of James Pershall, the brother of Edmund Perseall. Being now in the 75th year of my age, and think it proper to leave some memoirs of the Transactions of my Time, I shall in the first place set down as a key to all the rest, a remarkable passage that happened some time before the Restoration of the late King Charles II. In the time of Oliver's usurpation the reputed Delinquents and Recusants were necessitated to endeavor to make their compositions as well as they could and for that purpose to attend upon the several committees, both in London and in the country, as their different circumstances required; and make what interest they could for the mitigation of the high Impositions laid upon them. On this troublesome occasion Sir William Peshall, a gentleman of my acquaintance, who had been co-temporary student and fellow revellwe with the great Bradshaw at Gray's Inn, and by that means had contracted a great friendship with him, found himself obliged to apply to him.

Many years had intervened since they had lived together, but yet upon Sir William's first address to him Bradshaw assured him of the continuance of his friendship, and that he would confirm it by any favors he could do him or any Friend of his. And I have heard Sir William affirm it to the Gentlemen his Friends at the Club or Meeting then held in Hen and Chicken's Court, near St. Dunstan's Church in Fleet Street (where Sir William constantly resorted) that

he had experienced his Favour, both as to himself and others; and that he gave freedom of access at a time upon his occasions. And I remember he told us that once on waiting on him at his closet in or near to the Council Chamber and being then alone Bradshaw after his free and familiar way asked him, Sir William, what do you think I am doing. Sir William answered he could guess no otherwise than that he was busy with the affairs of his great Employment. Sir, said Bradshaw, I am studying Politicks. They have made me President of their Council and I am reading Mr. Secretary Cecil's Instructions left them; and pray you see how you Papists are to be dealt with. For this I assure you is the Secretary's own hand, giving him a loose sheet of paper out of several others. Sir William read it carefully and I remember told us of the club that the substance of it was That the Ministry should by no means be ever induced to take off the Penal Laws; but that when they perceived that by their connivance and forbearance to put them in execution, the Papists began to be too popular and agreeable both to their neighbors in the country and to their Relations and Friends at Court, as by their moral and charitable way of living they would not fail to do, and even to be thought to deserve the Privileges and Freedom of other subjects, and not the severity of Persecution merely for their conscience; then to obviate and allay this good opinion of their Relations and Neighbors, the Ministry must be sure to fix some odious Design upon them, which would never fail to be believed by the generality of the Common People, and then they might put the Penal Laws in execution to what degree they should think necessary and the People would think the Ministry kind and favorable to let them live. But they must never suffer themselves to be prevailed on to take off the Penal Laws; but reserve them as a Bridle to keep the Papists out of all public employ in their country, and to depress them whenever they should deem it necessary, or find them grow more numerous, or in greater favour and esteem with their neighbors. This, Sir, I remember very well was the substance of what Sir William told us he had read in that Paper, and I give you this account of it the rather, because, as I heard him speak it and attest it as a matter of Fact and a real Truth, so I have often reflected upon it, finding our Modern State Ministers pursuing the said Method exactly.

My dear Madam: True to my promise I send you the extract I promised. Be pleased to tell my Rev. Friend Mr. Ellacombe that I am much obliged by his kind note, and that after his Portrait is finished, I am fully determined to avail myself of his invitation to the Rectory house. With much esteem I remain My dear Madam Your humble Servant Geo. Oliver. Exeter 28 Oct. 1856.

To Miss Persall. This, says Robert Pearsall, was sent on the above date to my cousin who was staying at the Vicarage Bitton Gloucestershire; Willsbridge is in the parish. She afterwards married John Hughes, Barrister-at-Law, and is known in our communications as Mrs. Philippa Swinnerton Hughes, younger daughter of Robert Lucas Pearsall.

In 1653, Sir William went abroad, as is shown by a Warrant of the Council of State, Generals of Fleet, &c. dated April 14th, 1653, for a pass for Sir William Persall and three servants to foreign parts. In September 1660 Sir William Persall discovered and assisted to arrest Thomas Scott, a traitor, in Brussels. [Calendar of State Papers, Dom. Series, Chas. I.]

The Astons, with whom the Pershalls had long been associated, and into which family Sir William had married, were interested in America. In 1675-1679 Mr. Thomas Ashton was Sheriff of New York. In Hempstead April 30, 1657, Robert Ashman received the use of four gates of land for one year, belonging to the town in the East Ox pasture, he to maintain the fence for one year and to pay the town

five shillings. Sir Roger Aston was a member of the Second Virginia Company. [New York Hist. Rec., vol. xiv, page 690. Hempstead Town Rec., vol. 1, page 25.]

### SECTION 3, DIVISION E.

SIR JOHN PERSHALL, BART., son of Thomas Peshall, Chapter 26, Section 3, Division C.

Sir John Peshall, the first Baronet, died in 1646, shortly after the battle of Naseby, and was succeeded January 13, 1646-7, by his grandson, Sir John Pershall, Bart., of Sugnal, son of Thomas Pershall.

Sir John Pershall, Baronet was born September 30, 1638, and died 1701; married 1660, Frances, baptized at Prestbury, January 25, 1623-4, daughter of Col. Thomas Leigh of Adlington, Cheshire, sheriff of Cheshire, and his wife Anne Gobett of Bosworth, County Leicester. Children:—

1. Thomas Pershall, Bart., who died at Great Sugnal, buried in the family vault February 24, 1712.
2. John Pershall, bapt. at Horsley July 18, 1649; buried July 3, 1706. Chapter 26, Section 3, Division F.
3. Anne Pershall, executrix of her brother's will, died October 2, 1732; buried in Eccleshall Church, October 4, 1732.
4. Bridget Pershall, will dated July 18, 1692, probated 1700.

The Eccleshall Parish Records disclose an entry concerning the burial, March 13, 1662, of Robert Wilcocke servant to Sir John Pearshall.

The march of change was too steady to be resisted, so the second Baronet reverted to Pershall.

Sir John Pershall was made a fellow of the Royal Society in 1663. He does not appear to have acted on this selection as he did not even sign the Charter Book. The records of the Society disclose only his name without any other information concerning him whatsoever. Charles I., 1625-1649. Chancery Proceedings. Abstract. Bundle 59. No. 13. Peashall v Chrich. dated 21 June 1639. To the Rt. Hon. Thomas Lord Coventrie Lord Keeper of the Greate Seale of England. Yr. orator John Peashall of Sugnell in the Countie of Stafford, Barronett—That whereas Thomas Peashall Esqre now deceased youre orator's late father, was in his life tyme lawfully seized in his demeasne as of fee or of some other estate of inheritance in one messuage or tenement being in Cheswarden in the Countie of Salopp & of dyvers landes &c &c—bearing date about the 34th. year of Elizabeth granted & to farme let to Reignold Chrich & Margery his wife—Chrich being dead Sir John Peshall wishes to have possession of the land—21st year of King Charles. The joynt & several answers of Margory Chrich widdowe & John Chrich her sonne tow of the Defendants to the Bill of Complaint of Sir John Peashall, Barronett.

Charles I. 1625-1649. Chancery Proceedings. Bundle 83. No. 25. Peshall Bt. v Redferne. The Replication of Sir John Peshall, Barronett, complaynt. to the Answer of Robert Redferne, Defendant. The said Complaynante saving to him nowe and at all tyme hereafter the benefitt of exception to the uncertainty and insufficiency of the said Answer to him the said Complaynt. nowe and att all tymes saved for Replication thereunto saith in all thinges as hee before in his

said Bill of Complaynt hathe said with that, that hee doth and will Averr, mayntain, Justify and proove his said Bill of Complaynt & the matters and the things therein contayned to bee just and true and to be grounded upon good and sufficient matter and cause of suite in such manner and forme and to such end and purpose as in and by the said Bill is sett forth and declared—Without that, that the said Defendant did never promise to paye the said Rente of Six hundred and fiftene poundes to the said Complaynt. for thirty three yeares or for any tyme, but as hee should receive it of the Tenante that hold the Skine as the said Defendant pretendeth And without that, that any other matter or thinge mentioned or expressed in the said Answer materiall or effectual to be Replied unto not herein by way of Replication sufficiently confessed and avoyded denyed or traversed is true. All which matters & every of them the said Complaynt. is reddy to Averre and proove as this Honourable Court shall award, and prayeth as hee before in his said Bill of Complaynt. hath prayed.

Lease from Sir John Pershall of Horsley, Stafford, Baronet, and Bridget late wife of Thomas Pershall of Horsley, Esq. to Jane Pursglove of lands in Ashover and Lea. Dated 23 Charles I (1648) October 26, (Add. M. S. 6689, page 366, vide note book of Phillippa Swinnerton Hughes nee Pearsall). Indenture between Sir John Pershall of Horsley, com. Stafford, Baronet, to R. Hodgkinson and G. Cowley for the sale of the manors of Ashover and Lea dated July 27, 1648. [Add. M. S. 6669, page 157. Vide note book of Phillippa Swinnerton Hughes.]

The death of the first Baronet was followed almost immediately by the arrest of his grandson, the second Sir John Pershall. All that we know about it is contained in the following brief entry upon the public records. 25 April 1646. Sir John Pershall. His petition (missing) referred—Committed to Tower. [Misc. Gen. England and Wales, vol. 9, page 98, and Burke's Commoners, vol. 3, page 455.]

James Hall in his History of Nantmeil in Cheshire, says that Sir John Peshall of Checkley Bart. was discharged from his sequestration by the committee of the Lords and Commons by order dated March 3, 1646/7. His grandfather had been sequestered by the committee of Staffordshire. It would appear however as if all these entries referred to the grandfather. [Page 173, 180 and 187.]

We have now reached the time of the establishment of the Commonwealth of England and we find that those who took the part of the King in the great rebellion, or who professed the Roman Catholic religion, were termed delinquents and were fined in accordance with delinquency. The estates of those who fled the country were forfeited. Delinquents were required to make a confession of delinquency, a pledge of adherence to the present government, and a full account on oath of their possessions, real and personal. A commission for compounding with delinquents was created in 1644 and remained in existence until 1657.

Sir John Peshall no doubt paid well for his release from prison. The followers of Cromwell were slow to trust those of the nobility who had been known to be faithful to the king, particularly those who were in any way related to his family, no matter how remotely; hence every excuse would be found to delay the freedom of any such, as by being securely lodged in the Tower they were safely removed from opportunity to do the Commonwealth harm. Unfortunately, in 1648 Charles was desirous of promoting discord among his enemies, so he entered

into an agreement with the Scotch Presbyterians whereby he bound himself to acknowledge the Presbyterian discipline in England for three years and to suppress the independents and other sects. The Scots on their part promised to furnish him with an army to restore him to the throne. In theory this looked like a very wise move, but practically it alienated from him quite a few of the great body of loyal supporters of the Anglican Church, most of whom represented his most loyal supporters, as it practically assured the unsettling of the title to the lands acquired from the dissolution of the monasteries in the time of Henry VIII., and left the large body of Anglican Bishops and clergy without visible means of support unless they likewise changed their discipline and were accepted by the Presbyterians. However there were quite a few that were willing to make any personal sacrifice for the king, and on every side royalist insurrections blazed up in anticipation of the Scots. Wales was the first to rise, and of course Shropshire and Staffordshire participated in their uprising. The conditions however were very much the same as the efforts to displace the Conqueror. There was undoubtedly sufficient force to the revolt to have at least made a respectable showing had this force all been united into one body under a competent leader, but being merely local uprisings they were soon put down by the lieutenant of the Commonwealth. Meanwhile Cromwell marched triumphantly toward the north where the Scots were speedily defeated. In the Staffordshire uprising Sir John Pershall was not a participant and therefore he escaped arrest at this time.

The army having returned victorious its leaders determined to rid themselves of the king so he was brought to trial and after conviction he was beheaded on January 29, 1649. His behaviour upon the scaffold was simple and dignified and even excited the admiration of his enemies. The following stanzas from a poem written two years after the death of Charles, by a poet who was certainly not a royalist, shows the impression made by the king's bearing at his execution. [Readings in English History, by Edward P. Cheyney.]

He nothing common did or mean  
Upon that memorable scene;  
But with his keener eye  
The axe's edge did try:

Nor called the gods, with vulgar spite,  
To vindicate his helpless plight;  
But bow'd his comely head  
Down, as upon a bed.

Cromwell then directed himself to the punishment of those who had attempted to aid Charles by fomenting and assisting in the royalist uprisings. Fortunately Sir John Pershall, Junior, had learned wisdom and had not openly assisted in so purely a local disturbance. Consequently it was not possible to get any evidence at this time which would connect him with the royalist cause. This, however, did not deter the Sequestrators of Estate, so they proceeded to prove the unlawful acts of the dead baronet, entirely overlooking the fact that he had died before the trial, conviction, and execution of the late king so that his support of his sovereign was lawful and praiseworthy. The entire proceeding was to make his acts, criminal, *ex post facto*, which when committed were perfectly lawful.

Nevertheless they seized under the law two-thirds of the estate of Sir John Pershall, senior. Not only did they do this, but they likewise seized the estate of his widow, the grandmother of the present Sir John Pershall, as is shown by the records of the Committee for Compounding. Under the heading of Claimants on the estate of Sir John Pershall, sen., 12 Feb. 1651, it appears that Jeffrey Grimes of Eccleshall, co. Stafford begs a 7 years lease of the sequestered  $\frac{2}{3}$  of the estate of Lady Anne, widow of Sir John Pershall of Sugnall, recusant, petitioner being tenant to the estate 12 May, 1646. [S. P. Dom. Laterr. G. 87. 607.]

Sir John Pershall, senior, had been interested in the tobacco venture in Virginia together with his cousin Thomas Pearsall. We have already seen how vastly his estate grew during his lifetime, by the influx of wealth from the tobacco trading. Now two-thirds of it was sequestered to the Commonwealth. It must have been a rich plum. The officers of the Commonwealth did not confine themselves to what they could lay their hands on in England, but reached out for the property of the associators in Virginia as well. There lands, boats, equipment, stores, supplies and all went into the insatiable maw of the Cromwellian Dragon. Fortunately the settlement on Long Island being in a Dutch colony was beyond the reach of the Commonwealth of England. Nevertheless such of the vessels, not only of the Pearsalls, but of any of the king's followers, as were on the open sea or in English ports were speedily destroyed by the English navy or confiscated and sold under the English sequestration laws.

Cromwell had not gained much by executing one Charles, as another King Charles was there, and towards him either secretly or openly the royalists would turn their hearts and desires for the restoration of the monarchy. The young prince lost no time in getting into action for the recovery of his throne. He proceeded so well that on June 24, 1649, he was proclaimed Charles II. by Scotland. As a result another King Charles had the whole Scottish nation behind his back and a large part of the English nation ready to support him, but the most of the English royalists annexed the reservation, if it could be done with safety, but the sentiment which made this man powerful had not been eradicated and there were those who were ready to follow the new king no matter what the personal loss might be.

Cromwell hastened to Scotland to nip the mischief in the bud. Lord Fairfax with all friendliness declined to go. He did not see, he said, why the Scotch had not a right to settle their own government as they pleased. On July 22, the army crossed the border. On the 28th it was before Edinburgh. But the Scottish army was entrenched in front, too strongly posted to be attacked. Cromwell had to retreat to save his men from starvation. He lingered as long as he could, but on August 31, he marched back to Dunbar. [The Puritan Revolution, by S. R. Gardiner, page 164-166.]

His prospects now were forlorn enough. The Scotch had seized the pass through which the road led to England. On one side of him was the sea, on the other a long hill, now crowned with the Scottish army. Escape seemed difficult, well nigh hopeless. But the Scots were weary of waiting. On the morning of September 3 they began to descend the hill. Oliver saw his advantage. As the enemy reached the bottom he charged into them, dashed them into sheer con-

fusion, and drove them back into the ranks behind them. Let God arise, let his enemies be scattered! were the words which rose to the lips of the victor. The Scottish army was utterly ruined.

Cromwell was soon at Edinburgh, pleading scornfully and yet half-tenderly with the Presbyterian ministers. A large part of Scotland submitted to him. But there was still an army in the field which refused to submit, and during the winter and spring that army gathered strength.

In August the Scottish leaders resolved to push for England. An English insurrection in Cromwell's rear would make his position in Scotland untenable. With the young king in their midst, and Cromwell hard upon their heels, they marched doggedly southwards. Their hopes were disappointed. The fear of Cromwell kept those at home whose hearts were beating to join the Scots. Almost unaided the invaders struggled on till they reached Worcester. There Cromwell overtook them. Slaughter or capture was the lot of that doomed army. The dimensions of this mercy, wrote Cromwell, are above my thoughts. It is, for aught I know, a crowning mercy. He spoke truly. Never again was he called upon to draw sword in England.

Cromwell was at least spared the anxiety of deciding what was to be done with a second royal prisoner. Charles threw himself upon the loyalty of a Royalist gentleman in the neighborhood and he was not deceived. In after days men told how he had been seated in the branches of an oak whilst the troopers who were searching for him rode below. Dressed as a servant he rode to Bristol, with a lady riding on a pillion behind. At Charmouth he hoped to find a vessel to carry him to France. But the master of the ship refused to go. It was not till he reached Brighton, then a small fishing village, that he found the help that he wanted, and made his escape from England in safety.

Almost immediately the spies of the Commonwealth discovered evidence of a meeting of royal supporters having been held in Staffordshire, and a warrant was issued to commit Sir John Pershall Bart. as prisoner to the Tower for holding correspondence with enemies of the Commonwealth, and the following entries occur in the Calendar of State (Domestic Papers) for the same year. The evidence produced was so flimsy that the officers of the Commonwealth hesitated to make a charge of felony. It was therefore determined to dragnet the whole lot of supposed conspirators, so 20 Feb. 1650, a charge was formally presented to the committee against Sir Walter Aston or Ashton, Lord Aston of Tixall, Phil. Draycott of Painsley, Rob. or Will Fitzherbert of Swinnerton, Walter Fowler, Sir Will. Pershall or Pierceall, cousin of Sir John Pershall junior, William viscount Stafford, second son of Earl of Arundel, of co. Stafford. On information that they all (Wm. Fitzherbert excepted) conceal or enjoy a great part of their estates which ought to be sequestered, order to the county commissioners to examine witnesses to discover if they see cause to secure them till further order. [S. P. Dom., vol. 9.]

But although forced to seek safety in France, Prince Charles was not idle. By correspondence he kept in touch with his friends in England. Incidentally many of them were thereby brought into serious difficulties. Although Sir John Pershall junior had lost so heavily, yet he was loyal to his king, specially as that king and he had common ancestry. So Sir John Pershall became associated with



the most persistent conspirators for the restoration of the monarchy. The records of the Committee for Advance of Money, record that 22 April, 1651, Randal Egerton, Sir John Pershall, Sir Rob. Shirley of co. Stafford were charged upon information that in Dec. 1649 they held meetings at Col. Ralph Sneads house and Dallison Bridge, &c. to consult on letters from Charles Stuart, that they had private intelligence with him, that Egerton and Pershall drank to his health as king and to his happy arrival in England with an army, that Shirley undertook to furnish him with £1,000, part of which is paid, and Pershall with £200. [S. P. Dom. Later.]

What a wealth of family history is contained in this record. One would have to go back four and a half centuries to the beginning of things which had their culmination in the deposition of Charles I. of England to understand, in all its bearings, the depth of loyalty these men bore towards the house of Stuart. As to the Pershalls, the Arundels and the kingly house of Stuart, they all had their rootlets in that house of Fitz Alan, who, descending from Banco the Thane, furnished so many kings to Scotland. It is not possible to review even the principal incidents of their long relationship. Nor is it necessary to do so as the reader of this family history has, in almost every generation, been impressed with the wonderful loyalty which these families have for all these centuries held toward each other. It would be possible therefore to read between the lines of cut-and-dried public records a most interesting chain of events as making up the history of the Peshall family in this generation, all showing the loyalty to one's own family, even unto the trials of death.

Failing in the design to find a traitor in this band of Royalists, recourse was had to a so-called third degree examination. In the meantime it was ordered by the Council of State, May 13th, 1650, to write Col. Sanders to cause Sir John Pershall to be kept in safe custody until further order.

The Council of State having obtained all the information possible through their secret agents, they determined to find the weak place in the conspiracy and thus force the prisoners to convict themselves, therefore on May 14 they wrote to Col. Sanders to send up Sir Robert Sherley, Bart., Sir John Pershall, Bart., and John Offley, High Sheriff of the County Stafford, prisoners to the Tower for holding correspondence with the enemies of this Commonwealth. [S. P. Domestic.]

The prisoners were brought separately before the inquisition and there subjected to a most severe cross examination, but inasmuch as the followers of Sir John Pershall were loyal and true men, willing if need be to die for the right, and as there was no evidence in the hands of the Committee of State to guide the examination and in the absence of admissions by the prisoners the examination was productive of only negative results. Nevertheless a finding was made by the Council upon which May 27th, 1650, Warrant was issued to commit Sir Robert Sherley, Bart., Sir John Pershall, Bart. and John Offley, prisoners to the Tower for holding correspondence with the enemies of this Commonwealth. [S. P. Dom.]

This time the authorities determined to make the incarceration more severe than before so they arrested the wife of Sir John Peshall and the wife of John Offley. The ladies must have had a very uncomfortable time as, May 31, 1650,

it was ordered that Lady Pershall and Mrs. Offley were to have a maid each allowed to continue with them in the Tower. It also appears that the party had ridden on horseback and in postillion from Staffordshire to London accompanied by their servants. The authorities therefore made an order.—May 31, eleven horses which belonged to Mr. Offley, the High Sheriff, Sir Robert Sherley and Sir John Pershall to be committed to Mr. Serjeant, who is to have them appraised and then put in Hyde Park to graze until something shall be determined concerning the delinquency of the owner. [S. P. Domestic.]

On June 3rd a Warrant was issued from the Council of State to the Lieutenant of the Tower, to bring Sir Robert Sherley, Bart., Sir John Pershall, Bart., and Mr. Offley before the Council for trial on Tuesday, June 4th. The trial lasted nearly two weeks but ended without securing the conviction of the defendants. Nevertheless on June 15th, Sir Robert Sherley, Sir John Pershall, and Mr. Offley were remanded to the Tower, but were to be allowed the liberty of the Tower until further order. In the meantime the sequestrators were proceeding to dispose of or destroy the property of Sir John Pershall at Staffordshire. This was a very unfair proceeding as he had not been convicted; so manifestly was this so that even the council saw the injustice of it. Consequently a warrant was issued on July 23rd, to write the sequestrators of Staffordshire to forbear cutting down timber in Sir John's woods, and on Sept. 19th it was ordered that Sir John Pershall was to have the liberty of the Tower and the Lieutenant to be informed therein. [State Papers, Domestic.]

The matter lingered for nearly three months longer when Sir John Pershall was released upon bail, the records disclosing the following terse history of the event. Oct. 2nd, 1650, Sir John Pershall, Bart. Sum 2,000 pounds, No. of Sureties 2, Sum of each 1,000 pounds, Condition, appearance when required and good behavior. But all the time the officers of the Commonwealth were constantly and closely watching this band of Royalists. The minutes of the Council of State record Sept. 26, 1651, that William Pierceall is a notorious recusant, was in arms with his 2 sons and 3 horses at the relieving of Eccleshall Castle in 1643 and 1644, marched in Lord Aston's troops with sword and pistol and was in arms for the last king in Lichfield Garrison. [State Papers, Domestic.]

The Records of the Council of State Dec. 3, 1651 also show that further examinations were ordered as to the cause of sequestration, whereupon the Council of State wrote to Col. Danvers. We have received your letter and papers concerning Sir William Pershall. Examine that business further and if you find any ground for further proceedings send it. [State Papers, Domestic.]

In the meantime the Commonwealth had been successful against its foreign foes and the navy reorganized by Vane had cleared the seas of Royalists and privateers. This marked the last of the great fleet of merchant ships, sailing under the English flag, belonging to Thomas Pearsall, the Brents, and other Virginia, Maryland and New Amsterdam supporters of the House of Stuart. [The Puritan Revolution, by Gardiner, page 169.]

In January 1652 England declared war against Holland and the seizure of Dutch ships began. The two sturdy antagonists were well matched. There were no decisive victories. But on the whole the English had the upper hand. This

greatly if not entirely depleted the fleet of merchantmen belonging to the family in America. [The Puritan Revolution, by S. R. Gardiner, page 169.]

Such a war was expensive. Royalists were forced to compound for their estates forfeited by their adherence to the king's cause. Even if this measure of forfeiture had been fairly carried out the attempt to make one part of the nation pay the expenses of the whole was more likely to create dissension than to heal it. But it was not fairly carried out. Members of Parliament took bribes to let this man and that man off more easily than those who were less able to pay. Sir John Pershall had to submit to this extortion and bribery, as is eloquently shown by the following entries that appear on the records of the Council of State. [The Puritan Revolution, by S. R. Gardiner, page 169.]

Feb. 19, 1652. The discharge of the Commissioners for Sequestration confirmed by the Committee for Compounding if there be no fresh matter against him. March 9, 1652, Sir John Pershall claimant on the estate of Anne Lady Pershall. June 24, 1653. His trustees Thos. Leigh and 50 others beg discharge of lands and tenements in Great and Little Sugnall, Dorslow, and the Prebend of Eccleshall and Johnson and Offley hills in co. Stafford  $\frac{2}{3}$  of which are sequestered for the recusancy of Dame Anne Pershall now dead, the reversion being in petitioners by conveyance of Sir John Pershall for payment of debts the 22 March, 1655. Allowed as to Great and Little Sugnall and Dorslow which were the jointure of Dame Anne Pershall with arrears from 20 Dec. 1653, the date of petition. [State Papers, Domestic, G. 16, 44; G. 97, 629 and 695; G. 23, 1679; G. 144, 523.]

23 Mar. 1653. Title allowed and sequestration discharged.

17 June, 1656. His petition (missing) to be freed from the decimation tax referred by Council to the Committee in such cases.

29 June. A report that his estate is settled on trustees for payment of debts and raising portions for younger children, reserving but £150 a year for himself. Order that the Major General and County Commissioners act according to their general orders as to his discharge.

Thus we see that all the vast fortunes made out of the tobacco patent and the tobacco trade, together with all the inherited landed estate of the Pershall family, which inheritance it had enjoyed for centuries, had gone to pay the cost of running the Commonwealth of England. The wonder is that the heart had not also been taken out of Sir John Pershall, but all the time he remained loyal to his king, true to his manhood, faithful to the teachings and admonitions of his ancestors, and was implicitly trusted by his associates. What more could be said of any man, specially of John Pershall, whose ancestors and the ancestors of his fellow Royalists had for many centuries been likewise loyal, faithful and true; as can be well appreciated by the reader who has generation after generation journeyed through this family history from Rognvald, on the paternal line, and Orm on the maternal line, to Robert de Peshale and his wife Ormunda, and from thence generation after generation to Sir John Pershall, junior.

The death of Cromwell brought confusion to the Commonwealth and disintegration of the forces which supported it. The time seemed ripe for a revolution, so the Royalists arranged an uprising, but it was too early as the parliamentary forces were not yet so open-eyed to each other's faults as to be blind to

the common danger from the Royalists. The rebellion was beaten down by Lambert at Winnington Bridge, and by October 13, 1659, the Commonwealth was again supreme throughout the land. War means debt, and debts mean demands for payment, hence recourse was had to the apparently never ending source of money for the parliamentary party, namely the sequestration of the estates of the rich, particularly those who were known to be Royalists. As to Sir John Pershall, there could be no doubt as to his position, so he was early made a victim. Therefore the records of the Council of State give, 9 Nov. 1659, Sir John Pershall accused by the County Commissioners of Salop for complicity in Sir George Booth's rising. The Council of State note that he has also an estate in Stafford. [Staff. Hist. Col., vol. 1912, page 344.]

It seems remarkable to one who has examined the records to note how many times the Commonwealth sequestrated two-thirds of a royalist's estate. At first it was two-thirds of the whole estate, then two-thirds of the third that had escaped the previous taking, and then two-thirds of this remainder, so long, apparently, as there was anything to divide. No one contests the glory of the Commonwealth, but it was the royalists who paid the bills. When this means failed, the Commonwealth was doomed, for it had no adequate means of collecting taxes. It was therefore fortunate for Sir John Pershall that at this time the quarrels among the parliamentary forces became so acute that they had no time to harry their Royalist enemies.

The next year in May the house of Stuart was restored. The king surrounded himself with men of the most extreme party feeling. The Church of England was restored and the Presbyterians, and other non-conformists, both in England and Scotland, were subjected to great hardships and persecution. In due season Sir John Pershall was made Keeper and Justice of the Peace for Stafford. [State Papers, Domestic, G. 144, 523.]

We shall presently see how seriously this seventeen years of warfare affected the members of the family in America. It was not as if they had lived in a settled country, but on the contrary it was a great wilderness in which they were situated and it is a serious matter to destroy seventeen years of the life of a pioneer. For example, Henry Pearsall of Hempstead only lived seven years after the restoration of King Charles II. All this trouble, anxiety and final loss is not however cause for regret but the source of great family pride. It would hardly seem necessary to say that the relatives of Sir John Pershall's wife were also interested in America, for as a fact the family of Lee was associated with the Virginia Company.

Oct. 24, 1621. The Records of the Virginia Company show:—A Third Patent was for certaine old and new Adventures the new beinge to the number of thirteen whose names are these that follow viz. Rowland Trueloue, Tobias Cooper, Tho. Waterhouse, John Cocks, Frauncis Waterhouse, James Berkett, John Lake, Wm. White, Law. Leigh, Jo. Eikington, Ri. Perry, Tho. Ouer, Tobias Johnson, who have bought each of them a single share of land of ffrauncis Carter being pcell of 40 shares formerly assigned unto him by the Right Hono. the Lady Lawarr. All of which the Court did well approve of and ordered that Pattents

should be drawne upp ready for the sale against the next Quarter Courte. [Staff. Hist. Col., vol. 1, page 534.]

Thomas Lee was located in Hempstead on the west side of ye Road that leads from Cowneck to Herricks which made him next neighbor to the Pearsalls and part of their settlement in that town. William Lee became one of the Patentees of Hempstead. Sir Francis Leigh and Henry Leigh were members of the Second Virginia Company. [Hempstead Town Records, vol. 8.]

Sir Edward Bysshe, king at arms, 1654, says:—*Familia Peshalorum Staffordiensis, vulgo Pershall, &c. dictae sedis quam elegerunt, assumpto nomine, Peshall se dixere.* Translation: The Staffordshire family of Peshal, the large group of Pershall, &c., the most fastidious seated there, are said to take the name of Peshall to themselves. [Bodl. Sib. Mss., at Oxford, page 90.]

### SECTION 3, DIVISION F.

SIR THOMAS PERSHALL, son of Sir John Pershall, Chapter 26, Section 3, Division E, born 1647, died at Great Sugnal and was buried in the family vault in Eccleshall Church, February 24, 1712. In 1670, at which time he was aged 23 years, he married at Leeds, England, Rachel Metcalf, spinster, then aged 20 years. She survived her husband. On the death of Sir Thomas Pershall in 1712 the Baronetcy became extinct. Child:—

1. John Pershall, who predeceased his father and died without male heirs. Chapter 26, Section 3, Division G.

Walter Chetwynd, in his history of Pirehill Hundred, says Suggenhall was owned by John Peshall who was made a Baronet and built a stone mansion there, which in 1679 was the residence of Thomas Peshall, son and heir of this Sir John Peshall.

The following extract from the London Gazette (1679), transcribed in Dr. Burney's Mss. at the Salt Library is interesting: An humble address of the Town & Liberties of Eccleshall in the County of Stafford, signed by the Bishop of Litchfield and Coventry (who resides there) and by Sir Thomas Pershall and Sir Brian Broughton, Bart., and all the rest of the gentlemen and sufficient Freeholders and Householders in the neighborhood, was presented to his Majesty by John Pershall, Esq., introduced by the Rt. Hon. the Earl of Albemarle. John Pershall, Esq., above named, was the brother of Sir Thomas Pershall. He married Bridget Dabridgecourt, daughter of Sir Thomas D'abridgecourt and sister to John Dabridgecourt living in Maryland in 1684 and aged 16. [London Gazette, No. 3352, Dec. 23, to Dec. 27, 1679, transcribed in Dr. Burney's Mss. at the Salt Library.]

Will of Sir Thomas Pershall, Baronet. Dated, 5. Feb. 1712. Probate, 17. Feb. 1712. In the Name of God, Amen—I Sir Thomas Pershall, of Sugnal in the County of Stafford, Baronet doe hereby revoke all former wills by me at any time heretofore made and doe make this my last Will and Testament humbly recommending my Soul to God and my Body to be decently buried at the discretion of my Executrix hereafter named in the parish Church of Eccleshall in the County of Stafford in the vault there belonging to my Family. And as touching my temporall estate and concerns I dispose settle and order the same in manner following:—First my will is that all debts owing by me to any persons whatsoever at my deathe shall be fully and justly paid And my will is that all my Plate, Household goods, Stock upon the ground, Corn, Cattle, Goods and Chattels whatsoever shall in the first place by my Executrix hereafter named

be sold, and the moneys raised thereby together with all my arrears of Rent owing at my death, ready money lying by me or owing me at my decease and all other my personall estates whatsoever shall in the first place (after my funeral charges paid and satisfied) be applied towards the payment of such of my debts as my Executrix shall think fitt and as far as the same will extend to satisfy—And I doe nominate and appoint my dear and loving sister Ann Pershall sole Executrix of this my last Will and Testament Also I give and devise unto my said dear and loving Sister Ann Pershall and Robert Bosvile of Biano in the said County of Stafford Esquire and their heirs and Assigns All my Mannors, Messuages, Cottages, Lands, Tenements, Rents and Hereditaments whatsoever and wheresoever upon the Trusts and for the purposes hereinafter mentioned (that is to say) upon trust that my dear Sister and the said Robert Bosvile their Heirs and

Assigns doe and shall from my decease untill my Grand-daughter Arabella Pershall shall be married or dye which shall first happen, receive and take the Rents, Issues and Profits of all my said Mannors, Land, Tenements and Hereditaments and out of the same in the first place raise and pay the yearly sum of One Hundred pounds for the maintenance of my said Grand-daughter Arabella and apply and dispose of the residue thereof for the payment and discharge of such of my debts and the interest thereof and also all such Legacies and sums of money herein or in a Schedule hereunto annexed or in any other Will or Codicill to be given or appointed as my personal Estate shall fall short to pay and satisfie and from and after all my said debts and Legacies paid and satisfied then in Trust for and for the Benefit of the said Arabella Pershall and my said devise to my said loving Sister and Robert Bosvile and their heirs is upon this further Trust and Confidence that in case my said Grand-daughter Arabella shall live to marry and shall marry a Protestant in the Communion of the Church of England and professing the Religion and Doctrine thereof, being at the time of such her marriage of the Age of one and twenty years or upwards, or having if she be under that age the consent and approbation of my said loving Sister if she be living or if she be dead, of the said Robert Bosvile if he be living that then and in such case my said Sister Ann Pershall and the said Robert Bosvile their Heirs and Assigns shall with all convenient speed after the said marriage at the costs and charges in the Law of my said Grand-daughter Arabella and her husband convey and assure all my said Mannors, Messuages, Lands, Tenements and Hereditaments to the use of my said Grand-daughter Arabella for life without Impeachment of waste (voluntary waste in the Houses and Buildings excepted) The Remainder to her Husband for life Remainder to the issue of her Body, and for want of such Issue to the use of my said Sister Ann for life with remainder after her decease to the first son of the Body of my Grand-daughter Frances Ireland lately deceased being a Protestant in the Communion of the Church of England and professing the Doctrines thereof and continuing in the same Communion and Profession and the Heirs male of the Body of such first son being likewise Protestants of the Communion and Profession aforesaid and continuing in the same as aforesaid Remainder to the second and every other son successively of the Body of my said Grand-daughter Frances Ireland qualified as aforesaid and such Heirs males as aforesaid of the Body of such descendants every other son the elder of such sons and the Heirs male of his body being always preferred before the younger of such sons and the Heirs male of His and their Body and Bodies. Remainder to all and every the daughter and daughters of the Body of the said Frances Ireland are directed to be qualified as aforesaid and the Heirs of their Bodies qualified in like manner as Tenants in Common but with cross Remainders upon failure of Issue of one or more such daughters to the rest of such daughters and her and their Issue in like manner And for want of such Issue so qualified as aforesaid with remainder to my said loving Kinsman Robert Bosvile for his life without impeachment of waste. Remainder to his first and every other son successively and the Heirs male of their Bodies and for want of such Issue to Henry Bosvile next brother of the said Robert Bosvile and his sons successively in like manner and for want of such Issue to my own right Heirs for ever. And my further will and meaning is and I doe hereby declare the further Trust and Confidence in my said Sister Ann Pershall and the said Robert Bosvile and their Heirs to be that in case my said Grand-daughter Arabella Pershall shall dye unmarried that then my said Sister Ann Pershall and the said Robert Bosvile and their Heirs and Assigns shall with all convenient speed after the decease of the said Arabella Pershall convey and assure all and every the said Mannors, Messuages, Lands, Tenements and Hereditaments to the use of my said loving Sister Ann Pershall for her life with like Remainders to the Issue of the said Frances Ireland, to the said Robert Bosvile, Henry Bosvile and their Issue male and to my own right heirs and the same order with the same restrictions and qualifications Trusts and Limitations as are before directed from and after the decease of the said Ann Pershall And my further will and desire is and I doe hereby declare the further Trust and confidence in my said Sister Ann Pershall and the said Robert Bosvile their Heirs and Assigns to be that in case my said Grand-daughter Arabella Pershall shall live to marry a person not being a Protestant of the Communion and Profession aforesaid or shall marry before the age of one and twenty without the consent of my said loving sister or of my said kinsman Robert Bosvile if he be living and my said Sister dead then and in such case my said sister and the

said Robert Bosvile and their Heirs with all convenient speed after the said marriage shall convey and assure the said Mannors, Messuages, Lands, Tenements and Hereditaments to the uses following (that is to say) As to the one moiety thereof to the use of Henry Legh of High Legh in the County of Chester, Esquire, and George Parker of Parkhall in the same County, Esquire, and their Heirs for and during the natural life of my said Grand-daughter Arabella Pershall (without impeachment of waste voluntary waste excepted) on the Trusts hereinafter mentioned and from and after her decease to the use of the first son of the Body of the said Arabella Pershall brought up and continuing in the Religion in the Communion and Profession aforesaid and the Heirs male of the Body of such first son being likewise Protestants of the Communion and Profession aforesaid—Remainder to the second and every other son successively of the Body of my said Grand-daughter Arabella Pershall qualified as aforesaid and such Heirs male as aforesaid of the Body of such second and every other son, the elder of such sons and the Heirs male of his Body being always preferred before the younger of such sons, and the Heirs male of his and their Bodies—Remainder to all and every the daughter and daughters of the Body of the said Arabella Pershall qualified as aforesaid and the heirs of their Bodies qualified in like manner as Tenants in Common, but with cross Remainders upon failure of Issue of one or more of such Daughters to the rest of such Daughters and her and their Issue in like manner and for the want of such Issue so qualified as aforesaid Remainder to the use of my said Sister Ann Pershall for and during the term of her natural life—Remainder after her decease to the use of the first son of the Body of the said Frances Ireland being a Protestant in the Communion of the Church of England and Professing the Doctrine thereof and continuing in the Protestant Religion in the Communion and Profession aforesaid and the Heirs Male of the Body of such first son being likewise a Protestant of the Communion and Profession aforesaid Remainder to the second and every other son successively of the Body of my said Grand-daughter Frances Ireland qualified as aforesaid and such Heirs Male as aforesaid of the Body of such second son and every other son the elder of such sons and the Heirs Male of his Body being always preferred before the younger of such sons and the Heirs Male of his and their Body and Bodies. Remainder to all and every the daughter and daughters of the Body of the said Frances Ireland qualified as aforesaid and the Heirs of their Bodies qualified in like manner as Tenants in Common but with cross Remainders upon failure of Issue of one or more of such daughters to the rest of such daughters and her and their Issue in like manner. And as to the other Moiety of the said Mannors, Messuages, Lands, Tenements, and Hereditaments to the use of the first and every other son and sons, daughter and daughters of the said Frances Ireland being Protestants as aforesaid and continuing in the Protestant Religion in the Communion and Profession aforesaid and the Heirs Male and the Heirs of their respective Bodies qualified as aforesaid for such Estates and in such manner as the remainder of the former Moiety is before directed to be limited to them successively Remainder for want of such Issue so qualified to my dear Sister Ann Pershall for her life. Remainder to the said Henry Legh and George Parker during the life of my said Grand-daughter Arabella Pershall with like remainder after her decease to her several sons and daughters brought up and continuing in the Protestant Religion in the Communion and Profession aforesaid and the Heirs Male and the Heirs of their respective Bodies qualified as aforesaid for such Estates and in such manner as the said former Moiety is herein before directed to be limited to them successively after the death of the said Arabella Pershall with remainders of bothe the said Moieties for want of Issue of my said two Grand-daughters qualified as aforesaid to my said loving kinsman Robert Bosvile Esquire for his life without impeachment of waste. Remainder to his first and every son successively and the Heirs Male of their Bodies and for want of such Issue to Henry Bosvile, next brother of the said Robert Bosvile, and his sons successively in like manner, and for want of such Issue Remainder to my own right heirs for ever. And my further intent and meaning is that whenever my said Sister Ann Pershall and the said Robert Bosvile or either of them their or either of their Heirs or Assigns shall make a settlement of the said Mannors, Messuages, Lands, Tenements and Hereditaments in any of the cases aforesaid that there shall be a limitation therein expressed and contained precedent to all the said uses To the use of the said Henry Legh and George Parker or if they or either of them be dead, then of the Survivor of them and one other proper person or else of two other fitt and proper persons their Executors,

Administrators and Assigns for the term of One Thousand years from thence next following without impeachment of waste upon Trust out of the Rents, Issues and Profits of the said Mannors, Lands, and Premises or by Lease, Mortgage or Sale thereof, or of any part thereof for all or any part of the said Term to raise moneys for payment of all my just debts whatsoever and all legacies and sums of money herein or in any Schedule hereunto annexed given or in any future Will or Codicill by me to be given or disposed for any purpose whatsoever with proper provisos usual in such cases to make the same effectual and a special provisoe that if my Estate comes to be divided as aforesaid, each Moiety bears an equall part only. And I doe hereby direct the said Estate hereinbefore appointed to be limited to the said Henry Legh and George Parker and their Heirs and Assigns shall permit and suffer the said Arabella Pershall and her Assigns to receive the Rents, Issues and Profits of the said Moiety for her and their own use for such part and parts of the said Term as she the said Arabella shall not be a Protestant of the Communion and Profession aforesaid or shall be the wife of a person not a Protestant of the Communion and Profession aforesaid they the said Henry Legh and George Parker their Heirs and Assigns shall receive the Rent, Issues and Profits of the Premises and shall thereout yearly pay to my said loving Sister the sum of One hundred pounds per annum by two half yearly payments during her life if the said Term so long continue and the residue not paid to my Sister shall apply entirely for the raising one half of the money for my said debts, Legacies, and Appointments aforesaid and after one half thereof so raised out of that Moiety of the said premisses to and for the use and Benefit of the Person or Persons next in remainder after that Estate for life And my will is that the said Estate hereinbefore appointed to the said Henry Legh and George Parker, their Heirs and Assigns in the latter of the said Moieties of the said Premises during the life of the said Arabella Pershall (scratched out) be declared to be upon the like Trust for preserving the contingent Remainders and for my said Grand-daughter Arabella Pershall during such time and times of the said

Term as she shall be a Protestant of the Communion and Profession aforesaid and shall be the widow or the wife of such Protestant of the Communion and Profession aforesaid and all other times and parts of the Term and Trust to apply the whole Profits for payment of the said half of my debts, Legacies and Appointments intended to be charged on the said latter Moiety of the premisses and after payment thereof in Trust for the next in remainder immediately expectant on the Determination of that Term and Estate And it is my further will and meaning that the Remainders in the said intended settlement to my Cousin Robert Bosville and his Issue Male and to his brother Henry Bosville and his Issue Male as aforesaid shall be with such Conditions, Limitations and Provisions as may oblige him, them and every of them who shall enjoy the said Mannors and Premises or any part thereof to take upon him and them the Surname of Pershall and continually to retain and use the same—And it is my further will that in the said intended settlement power be given to the respective Tenants for Lives to make Leases as Tenants in-Tail may by Law doe and not otherwise—

In Witness whereof to two of these writings both of one Tenor, and each of them purporting my last Will and Testament. I the said Sir Thomas Pershall have set my hand and seal the Fifth day of February in the year of Our Lord Christ, One thousand seven hundred and twelve and in the eleventh year of the Reign of Our Sovereign Lady Ann, by the Grace of God, Queen of Great Britain, France, and Ireland, Defender of the Faith, etc. Tho Pershall / Signed and Sealed by the within named Sir Thomas Pershall the Testator and by him published and declared for and as his last Will and Testament in our presence, who at his request and desire were Witnesses thereto and have hereunto subscribed our Names as Witnesses thereto in his presence. J. Fowle Jr., Jno Leeke, Will Statham. The Letters Testamentary were issued only to Ann Pershall but this did not alter the trusteeship of Robert Bosville as named and defined in the said will of Sir Thomas Pershall.

It will be noticed that Sir Thomas Pershall did not mention his wife in his will, probably because she was amply provided for in the marriage-settlement. She was living in 1726, for in the House of Lords Calendar Appeals, February 24, 1726, appears the record that the cause heard was Squire against Lady Pershall. In a lawsuit, Richardson Division, 1713, 322-32. Persall vs. Calverslay, the plaintiff was Rachel Pershall the wife of Sir Thomas Pershall, about lands in the town of Leeds. [Public Records Office.]

### SECTION 3, DIVISION G.

JOHN PERSHALL, Esq., son of Sir Thomas Pershall, Chapter 26, Section 3, Division F. The Parish Record of St. Edmunds, Lombard Street, London, discloses the following concerning the marriage of John Pershall:—1690, May 15, John Pershall Esq. of St Margaret, Westminster, Bachelor, aged 21, and Madam Charlotte Culpepper of St James in ye Fields, Middlesex, spinster, aged 15, consent of Madam Susanna Welden alias Willis. [Harll. Soc., vol. 26, page 312.] The father of the bride was Thomas, second Lord Culpepper, to whom the said Susanna Willis had been second wife. John Pershall was buried at Eccleshall Church, Staffordshire, July 3, 1706, and his wife was buried at the same place November 29, 1732. Children:—

1. Thomas Pershall, bapt. at Eccleshall, September 16, 1693; died an infant.
2. William Pershall, died young.
3. Frances Pershall, baptised at Eccleshall, September 16, 1693. She died in the nineteenth year of her age and was buried at Albrighton near Shrewsbury, County Salop, June 13, 1712; she married Thomas Ireland Esq. of Salop who died 1789, leaving child:—\*1. Thomas Ireland of the Hall of Al-

brighton near Shrewsbury, County Salop, born at Albrighton May 31, 1712, and mentioned in the will of Arnold Langley, April 10, 1783; married first, Sarah, who was buried at Albrighton, October 26, 1740; and second, Amy Francis Pershall, who was buried at Albrighton January 24, 1759. He died aged 77 and was buried at Albrighton November 18, 1789. [Misc. Gen. England and Wales, vol. 4, page 94.] The Ireland family had long been friends and business associates of the Pershall family. The records of New Amsterdam disclose that Thomas Ireland was among the proprietors named in the charter for the first patented town of Hempstead in 1644, and that he was among the first proprietors of Jamaica, Long Island.

4. Arabella Pershall, baptised at Eccleshall, 1702; died at Bath, September 10, 1762; married June 23, 1730, as his second wife, the Right Honorable John Campbell, Viscount of Glenorchy, and later Earl of Breadalbane (Broadalbin) in Scotland, who died January 26, 1782. Children:—\*1. George Campbell, who died an infant; \*2. John Campbell, born September 20, 1738, who married Willielma daughter and coheir of William Maxwell of Preston, Lancashire. John Campbell died November 14, 1771, without male issue.

By the will of her grandfather, Sir Thomas Pershall, Lady Viscountess Glenorchy had been possessed of a life estate in his lands and tenements contingent upon her marriage to a Protestant. She had lived to be thirty-seven years of age without meeting this condition and the remainder men naturally looked upon her as a confirmed spinster. Having an intention to marry she in 1730 commenced proceedings to close the trust created by her grandfather's will so that she might bring to her husband a suitable marriage settlement. While the suit was pending it appearing evident that the conditions must be satisfied before the estate would vest in her in tail, the marriage was consummated between her and the Right Honorable Lord Glenorchy and he became a party to the action in the court of Chancery. (The case is reported in Talbot 3. and noticed in Miss. Gen. and Heral., fifth series, vol. 1, page 277.) The conditions having been fulfilled, the property was awarded to Lady Viscountess Glenorchy and her husband, as tenants by the entail, to them and their heirs male. Which they subsequently barred according to the terms of the statute covering such procedures.

This brought in the hands of Lady Arabella, Viscountess of Glenorchy, afterwards Countess of Breadalbine, all the papers relating to the Horsley branch of the family, so far as they had been preserved, and had escaped the fire which in a previous generation had destroyed the Hall of Horsley with all its priceless contents. In his note book after setting out the dates of births, marriages, and deaths of the persons making up the history of this branch of the family, the Reverend John Peshall adds the following memorandum:—The above copy was taken from the handwriting of Sir John Peshall, Bt. in a Register Book he kept of his family Ao. 1752 by the leave of Lady Glenorchy who had then possession of it—By me John Peshall—The Rev (Sir) John Peshall, (Bt) dying on the 9th Nov. 1778, his eldest son John wrote to the Earl of Breadalbane for an attested copy of the



foregoing Register. Arabella (née Pershall) his wife being dead, in reply he received the following letter:—Sir I am very much afraid it will not be in my power to procure you a copy of the Register of the Pershall (Peshall) Family. After my son's marriage I gave him his mother's Estate, which was afterwards sold, & I suppose the Papers were given with the Land to the Purchaser who was a Land Broker, & I've been told has since sold the whole in parcels to several persons, by which he made considerable profit. As the Paper you want could be of no use to any of those buyers, it has probably not been preserved. All my Papers are in the Country, where they cannot be come at in my absence: when I am there next Summer I will make a strict search amongst them, & if unexpectedly this Paper is there I will have the pleasure of sending you a copy of it properly attested. Old age & the Infirmities naturally attending it make my being in London this winter very doubtfull. I am, Sir, Your very humble Servant, Breadalbane. Edinburgh, 11 Decr. 1778.

John Pershall, Esq. was one of the Keepers and Justices of the Peace for Staffordshire in 1702. [Hist. Col. Staff., vol. 1912, page 344.] John Pershall was a member of Parliament for New Castle under Lymme, Co. Stafford. His will was dated April 12, 1705 and probated in 1706. His wife died in 1756. She names her good friend Mr. Thomas Bosville and her daughter Lady Glenorchy. With the death of John Pershall, the senior male line of Pershall became extinct.

In Chancery Proceedings, Bridges Division, 1613-1714, Vol. III, I-Q Bundle 180, No. 145, are to be found the papers in the case of John Pershall and Charlotte his wife Vs Thomas Lord Fairfax and Katherine his wife. Subject being Lands called Foshaw, Thoresway, Mayfield, Lydd &c in the Counties of Warwick, Lincoln, Sussex and Kent respectively. The same controversy is noticed in the published State Papers, Domestic, for the reign of King William and Mary:—Case of John Peshall, Esq., and Charlotte his wife, one of the daughters of the Right Hon. Thomas, late Lord Culpepper. The said Lord Culpepper being seized in fee of divers manors and hereditaments within this kingdom of a very great value, did upon the third and fourth of October, 1688, by deed of lease and release, settle all his real estate upon the Hon. Sir John Trevor, and others, their heirs, to the safe uses and trusts therein contained; and in particular by the said settlement did convey a manor of Thoresway in the County of Lincoln, and several other lands to William Potte, and William Roberts, gentlemen, for the term of 200 years, in trust and to the intent by mortgage, sale, or otherwise, to raise the summe of £3,000 to be paid to Charlotte, Mr. Peshall's now widow at her age of 21 years, or day of marriage, which should first happen; and also that the payment of £120 per annum for her maintenance from the time of his death to the respective days aforesaid; and by the said settlement conveys the inheritance of all the said land, charged as aforesaid, to his daughter Katherine, now the wife of Lord Fairfax, and her heirs for ever.

That some short time after he made his last will and testament, all writ with his own hand, and hath been since proved and affirmed in the Court of Delegates and by the same confirms the Trust in the said settlement in every particular relating to his daughter Charlotte; and as further testimony of his affection

to her, devises £80 per annum to her, to be paid for 8 years out of a pension of £600 per annum granted to him for 21 years by the late King Charles, the Second, and makes his daughter Katherine, now the Lady Fairfax, his sole Executrix, as by the seal, and in Jan. 1689 departed this life. That after the death of the said Lord Culpepper, the Lady Fairfax entered into all the real estate and possessed herself of the personal estate and particularly of the £600 per annum, so charged with the respective payments and sums aforesaid; and she and the Lord Fairfax in her right have received the whole profits ever since, but paid no part of the said £3000, the £120, or £80 per annum, though the whole £600 hath been paid constantly and received by them. That in May 1690, Mr. Peshall in consideration of the portion and provisions aforesaid and the affections he had for her, married the said Charlotte and has had several children by her; and his father Sir Thomas Peshall being seized of very considerable estate would have settled the same upon Mr. Peshall, his wife and children, whenever her portion should have been paid, or secured and is still willing to do the same, but till then will neither settle his estate nor give Mr. Peshall any settled maintenance to support him or his family.

That the Lord Fairfax, and his Lady, are accountable for the profits of the land charged with the portion and payments aforesaid, and receives the said £600 per annum pension money in right of his wife, as executrix to her father. That by their entry and receipt of the profits of the real and personal estate they have made themselves trustees for Mr. Peshall and his wife and as such must account whenever the Lord Fairfax shall be obliged to waive his privilege.

That the grant for 21 years of the pension of £600 per annum expires within a year, and in case the said Lord Fairfax happen to die, all the money received by him out of that fund and due to Mr. Peshall will be lost, it being merely personal and not charged upon the land and that there is due from Lord Fairfax and his wife on the aforesaid accounts to Mr. Peshall above the sum of 5,000 pounds.

Horsely, Sugnal, and Pershall, under the terms of her grandfather's will, passed to Arabella, who married, in 1730, Lord Glenorchie, third Earl of Breadalbane. In *Fog's Weekly Journal*, July 4th, 1730, the following appears: Marriage: The Lord Glenochy, son and heir of the Right Hon. Earl of Breadalbane, to Miss Pershall, granddaughter of Sir Thomas Pershall of Stafford. [Burney's Mss., Staff. Hist. Col., Salt Library and Eccleshall Parish Register, 1730.]

In Vol. II of a *Complete Peerage of England* we find that John (Campbell), Earl of Breadalbane, born 1695, was Minister to Copenhagen in 1720, became Lord Glenorchy in 1725, was husband to Arabella, third daughter and coheir of John Pershall, son and heir apparent of Sir Thomas Pershall, Bart., by Charlotte daughter of Thomas, Lord Colepepper. This Arabella died at Bath on Sept. 1, 1762, in her 60th year. Lord Glenorchy died on Jan. 26th, 1782, in his 86th year at the Abbey of Holyroodhouse. Arabella's son, Lord Glenorchy, sold Great Sugnal for £30,000 in 1770, with the co-operation of his father. [Genealogist, vol. iv., new series, and Passenger of Scotland, London 1767, page 160.]

An interesting aspect of all this is that Thomas, Lord Culpepper, was twice Governor of Virginia, first in 1679, and later in 1683. While Governor, he acquired large tracts of land in the Northern neck of Virginia which later came into the

possession of Thomas, Lord Fairfax, of Virginia, his grandson, and that while the latter owned these lands he created a manor which he conveyed to Job Pearsall, the grandson of George Pearsall, of Long Island, New York, a lineal descendant of Edmund Pershall. This Job Pearsall, with the assistance of Lord Fairfax, and under the supervision of George Washington, erected thereon a fort called Fort Pearsall, which has since become the town of Romney, the county seat of Hampshire county, West Virginia.

The Willis family were heavy holders of land in Hempstead where they were among the first new-comers after the original settlers. William Willis bought three hundred acres on the south side of the Harbour Hills. He also owned at Westbury. Afterwards the family increased in numbers and their wealth growing apace they were ranked among the largest land owners in this settlement. The Willis family had long before this settled in and owned lands in Virginia.

#### SECTION 4.

ROBERT PESHALL, married ———. He died Dec. 12, 1622, and was buried in the Eccleshall Vault. He resided at Blorepipe, Staffordshire, and in Leicestershire. Child:—

1. Elizabeth Peshall, who married first, Sir Robert Bosville, of Ainsworth, Kent. Children:—\*1. Robert Bosville. \*2. Rachel Bosville. Elizabeth Peshall married second, Sir Humphrey Style, Knight and Baronet. No children by this marriage. Walter Jerrold in his *Highways and Byways in Kent* (London, 1908), says that Sir Humphrey Style lived in Langley Park near Beckenham in Kent. He was Cup bearer to Charles I. and his half-brother William Style was a distinguished writer on Law. A long letter which Jerrold quotes gives an interesting account of the particulars of the preparations for attending the Assizes (the sessions of the court of justice) in the olden time. The latter part of the letter, which is to his wife, gives some intimate particulars of the preparation needed to make the necessary brave appearance by one of the high officials of the County.

On Sundaye morninge before you goe out of towne, send Snelger to Sir John Spralie to fetch the horse hee lent me and let him be wel looked to at my stable in London, til I coom thither on Mundayes: then I will dispose of him, and would have Mr. Brookes to fit the boyes shute to him, and if there be ever an ould laced band of mine past my wearing, let the boye have it. If the Croiden shoemaker hath not brought my boots and the boy's let be sent for with all speede, I would have the coachman if thou canst spare him, to goe to Langlie for a day or two and let him take oile with him to oile the great Coche, and let him bee sure it bee well mended and cleane for I wolde have that coche brought to mee on Shrove Sundaie to London to be there in readiness. I would have thee send for Sir Cornelius Fairemede to desier him not to faile to be ready according to his promise on Tewesdaye morning to goe along with mee; also that he speak to Sir John Ashland and Mr. Braye and any one gallant man like himselfe, that maye make the better showe. Let Mr. be spoken to that my satten shut bee in readines and if I have never a silver hat band that he bespeake me a curious

neate one. I wold have brought from Langley the felt hat laced with saten and my damask night bagg and cloth.

This is all, Sweete hearte, I can remember for this time. I pray thee bee merry and make much of thy self and take the coch and go brode this fayre wether; it will do thee good. So with my best love to thee, and my kind remembrance to my sister and all friends, in great haste by reason of the speedie departure of the bearer who hath promised me safely to deliver this letter, I rest—Thy trewly loveing husband.

The Eccleshall Parish Register records the burial on Nov. 25th, 1608, of Thomas Penyfather, son of Ann Pennyfather of Croxton, Mr. Robert Pershal's man, of Bloore Pipe. This is evidently the father of the servant named in Robert Peshall's will. The burial on Dec. 12, 1622, of Robert Peashall, of Bloorepipe, Esq. is also recorded. Robert Pershall was so called by his parents and he contracted a good marriage, but with whom does not appear by the published genealogies, or by the records of the locality, so far as they have come to our notice. After a time he became acquainted with Sampson Erdeswicke who pointed out to him that the old charters of his family gave their surname as Peshall, so Robert Pershall became Robert Peshall, and for some reason or other insisted upon being called Peashall. He was a high liver in a time when such living called for the expenditure of considerable sums of money in annual expenses. He deposited some money with his brother Edmond Pearsall which brought him a good annual income, but he was not saving, hence he never had much if any surplus funds for investment in lands and tenements, wherewith to increase his position as a landed proprietor, but, nevertheless, his lands continually grew to be of greater size and value. The reason for this was that he was made the trustee of the lands bought by his brother Edmond Pearsall, and these lands were vested in him without any declaration of trust for the uses of the same. The loan from Robert Peshall to Edmond Pearsall was made circa 1580, and from this time when their business dealings together began until Robert Peshall and Edmund Pearsall closed these dealings in 1614, the land holdings of Robert Peshall began to grow with certain and continued uniformity, evidencing the possession of an assured income of large size. It is known that Robert Peshall did not possess such an income above his annual living expenses. The following appear among other conveyances to him during the period of his dealings with his brother Edmond Pearsall.

Final Concords. On the Octaves of St. Michael, 25 Elizabeth, 1582. Between Robert Peshall gentleman, complainant and Roger Campyon and Elizabeth his wife, deforciants of 10 acres of pasture in Eccleshall and Slyndon. Roger and Elizabeth remitted all right to Robert and his heirs for which Robert gave them £40. [Staff. Hist. Col., vol. 15, page 156.]

On the Octaves of St. Hillary, 29 Elizabeth, 1586. Between Robert Pershall gentleman, complainant and John Harcourt, otherwise Cooke, gentleman, and Margaret his wife deforciants of a messuage, 3 cottages, 4 acres of land and 20 acres of pasture in Eccleshall. John and Margaret remitted. [*Ibid.*, vol. 15, page 172.]

Final Concords. On the Octaves of St. Michael, 32 Elizabeth, 1589. Between Robert Pershall complainant and Richard Parrant and Anne his wife deforciants

of a messuage, a garden, and an orchard in Eccleshall. Richard and Anne remitted. [*Ibid.*, vol. 16, page 104.]

Final Concords. On the Morrow of Holy Trinity, 36 Elizabeth, 1593. Between Thomas Owen, one of the Justices of the Lady the Queen of the Bench, Ralph Sneyde, armiger, Richard Brooke, armiger, Walter Fowler, armiger, Robert Ireland, armiger, William Agard, armiger, Thomas Astley, armiger, Thomas Wolsley, armiger, John Coyney, armiger, Humphrey Harecourte, gentleman, John Hunt, gentleman, Robert Pershall otherwise Patteshall, gentleman, and Edward Blunt, gentleman, complainants and Francis Bydulff, armiger, deforciant of the manor of Bydulff, and of 30 messuages, 30 tofts, 4 mills, 4 dove-cotes, 30 gardens, 3,000 acres of land, 300 acres of meadow, 3,000 acres of pasture, 300 acres of wood, 500 acres of furze and heath, 6 acres of land covered with water, and 60s. of rent with the appurtenances, and of two-thirds of 4,000 acres of land, 100 acres of meadow, 4,000 acres of moor in Bydulff, Overton, Horton, Hay, Rushton Grange, Stoke and Burslem. Francis remitted all right to the complainants and to the heirs of Thomas Owen for which the complainants gave him £600. [Staff. Hist. Col., vol. 16, page 136.]

Final Concords. On the Morrow of Holy Trinity, 39 Elizabeth. (1596). Between Arther Ratcheffe gentleman and Robert Pearsall gentleman, complainants and John Yonge, gentleman deforciant of a messuage, a garden, an orchard, 600 acres of land, 20 acres of meadow, and 60 acres of pasture in Charnes and Eccleshall. John remitted to Arther and Robert and to the heirs of Arther. [*Ibid.*, vol. 16, page 167.]

Final Concords. On the Morrow of Holy Trinity, 40 Elizabeth. (1597) Between Robert Pershall, gentleman, complainant, and Thomas Allatt deforciant of 5 messuages, 40 acres of pasture, 80 acres of furze and heath in Eccleshall, Croxton, Great Sugnall and Little Sugnall. [*Ibid.*, vol. 16, page 180.]

On the Octaves of St. Hillary, 1 James I. (1603) Between Robert Peshale gentleman, complainant and Robert Paddy and Margaret his wife deforciants of 3 messuages, 4 cottages, 6 gardens, 3 orchards, 10 acres of land, 6 acres of meadow, 20 acres of pasture, 5 acres of moor in Eccleshall and Beonney, otherwise Berondeney. [*Ibid.*, vol. 18, part 1, page 33.]

On the Octaves of Michaelmas, 2 James I. (1604) Between James Albott, complainant, and Robert Pershale gentleman, deforciant of a messuage, a garden, an orchard, 10 acres of land, 4 acres of meadow, 30 acres of pasture, 20 acres of furze and heath in Eccleshall, Little Sugnell and Great Sugnell. [*Ibid.*, vol. 18, part 1, page 42.]

In Chancery Proceedings, James I. (Bundle 15, No. 64) it appears that in 1608 Robert Peshall tried to acquire the Capital messuage, manor House, Priory House and site of the late dissolved Priory of Elvescroft als Wolvescroft, in the county of Lincoln. But when it came time to pay the consideration money agreed upon he, Robert Peshall, admitted that he did not have the means to pay the same unless his brother Edmond Pearsall in London would provide the same. At Robert's suggestion the negotiations were adjourned to London where Robert backed out of the bargain because he could not get his brother to make the obligations guaranteeing the payment of the instalments of the purchase money.

Afterwards Edmond tried to buy the property for himself but before this could be consummated there was some effort made by the owner to sell to others. The brothers Robert and Edmond thereupon filed a Bill of Complaint in Chancery to try to compel a sale to them. The scheme worked as the property was acquired by Edmond, the title being taken in the name of Robert. There never was any serious question that the consideration money was paid by Edmond out of the profits of his business. This is one of the properties referred to by Edmond in his will as then in litigation. The property appears among the assets of Robert Peshale at the time of his death.

It is described as the Capital Messuage, Priory House, and Site of the late dissolved Priory of Elvescroft als Wolvescroft, in the County of Leicester, and all and singular the houses, buildings and barns, stable, orchards, gardens, and barkfields with the appurtenances to the said Capital Messuage and Site of the said Priory belonging and of and in divers and sundry lands, tenements and hereditaments, lying and being in the towns, villages, parishes, hamlets and fields of Elvescroft als Wolvescroft, Ratby Newton and Marrowliffe, in the said County of Leicester, commonly called or known by the several names of Cowclose, Bastards Lease, Wilsons Meade als Nowells, Nowells Spring, Stainway Leyes, Stainway Spring, Johns Lease, Johns Lease Spring, Ryall Carr, Upper Blac Cliff, Nether Black Cliff, Conduit Close als Conduit Lease, Fawknors Close, New Close, Redd Lanes, Cooke Carr, Ffoxholes als Collins Close, Great Scratt Close, Little Scratt Close, More Fields, Bishops Field als Butchers Field, Paymans, Hey, als Packmans Hey Copt, Eake als Coppedake Close, Hammers Cliff, Stainwell Hills, Moseleye Plain, Bishops Hill, Crowhill, Black Cliff Hill, Bamden Castle, Ghorleys Close. Parcel of Paymans Hey and Coulbournes Close, Parcall of Paymans Hey or by what soever name or names the same or any of them are called or known and of and in divers the messuages, cottages, lands, tenements and hereditaments with the appurtenances situate and being in the towns, parishes and fields of Elvescroft als Wolvescroft, Ratby Newton and Marcliffe, aforesaid, or in any of them, to the said Priory or Lordship belonging now or late in the tenure of Nicholas Cock, Robert Bennett, Bemett Pykoard. Bemet Strannge and John Crump or any of them or their assigns.

It is interesting to note that at this time Robert was not able to pay the sum of £3500, the consideration money in instalments running over several years, out of his own moneys, but had he bought he would have had to depend entirely upon his brother Edmond to pay the same out of the profits of his business.

In an old book called *England Illustrated*, printed in 1764, under the caption of the County of Leicester, it appears that at Charley and Unvercross, two solitary places in the forest of Charnwood, South East of Ashby de la Zouch, there was settled in each of these three friars, heremites, by Robert Blanchmaines, Earl of Leicester, in the time of Henry II. (1154-1189) but by the consent of the Earl of Winchester, Patron of both houses in the time of Edward II. (1307-1327), they were united at Ulvercross where there continued a Priory of regular canons of the order of St. Austin dedicated to the Virgin Mary till the dissolution, when there were eight religious in it who were endowed with £83. 10. 6 per annum. The premises were worth much more than these old leases called

for, hence the present proprietors sold to Edmond Pearsall a very valuable property which he vested in his brother Robert Peshall.

Final Concords. At 15 days from Easter, 9 James I. 1611. Between Robert Pershall, gentleman, complainant and Francis Lacon, knight, deforciant of a messuage, a garden, an orchard, 50 acres of land, 10 acres of meadow, 40 acres of pasture, 100 acres of furze and heath in Bishops Offley otherwise Byshops Offleye, Eccleshalle, Tunstall and Adbaston.

In his note book The Reverend Sir John Peshall says that an original deed existed in his day dated 30 March, 12 James I., signed by Robert Peshall of Blore Pipe, wherein it appears that he settled the Priory of Olverscroff in Leicester and a capital messuage and hamlet in Eccleshall, called Bromley's Lands, and in Bishops Offley, Peshall, Croxton and Little Sugnall on his daughter Elizabeth, the wife of Sir Robert Bosville, and after her decease on Charles Bosville and Rachel Bosville, their children.

This deed was made at the very time that Robert Peshall and his brother Edmond Pearsall were settling their accounts for the moneys that Robert Peshall had deposited with Edmond Pearsall. This property described in this deed belonged to Edmond Pearsall, and the original consideration money was in no way involved in the settlement the brothers finally arrived at the next year. It will be well to bear in mind that Robert Peshall and his brother Edmond Pearsall were the best of friends and had the closest brotherly relations at all times, and so far as any one knows this friendship and brotherly feeling continued until the day of Robert Peshall's death, when Edmond Pearsall discovered that this deed had been made so as to dispose of this property to the heirs of Robert Peshall.

Robert Peshall was imbued with the old feudal ideas of a nobility based upon the ownership of lands devoted to agriculture, with tenantry who supported the lord of the land, and served him in his every want. In consideration whereof the lord afforded the tenants of his lands every protection against oppression by other lords. The whole fabric of the government being primarily based upon service in time of war, beginning with the lord's obligation to serve the King, and running on down to the lowest military tenant, and then on down to the most menial dependent. That England should ever desire to expand on lines which made her merchants and manufacturers supreme, and that a constant and continued stream of new blood should by this door come into the nobility, did not enter into his calculation at all. He looked with condescending eyes upon his brother who was a merchant and tried, in all ways and every manner possible to remove out of the contaminating trade as much as possible of the wealth coming to Edmond Pearsall, and so direct it that it would be invested in lands which would serve to increase the social standing of himself and his family. In which resolution he did not entirely include Edmond Pearsall, the author and owner of this wealth. He hoped that Edmond Pearsall's oldest son, Robert Pearsall, would return to the teachings of his ancestors, that trade was not for gentlemen. The story has been told so often that its repetition now would seem superfluous, that one having such views of the social scale of his family really thinks that he is doing them a favor by investing their money in lands so as to increase their social standing in the kingdom of England. It has always proven an easy step

for such a one to finally come to the conclusion that he is of so much better clay than his brother in trade that really the best interests of all will be better conserved by his founding a real house among the nobility, based upon the very lands which he holds as trustee. That this is a very perverted view of the rights of the owner has never or rarely ever prevented such conversion being made for the benefit of the would-be gentleman.

On the contrary Edmond Pearsall saw only the delights of trade to the uttermost parts of the earth and over all of England. He was able to go into the cottage of the humblest landholder and deal with him fairly, openly, honestly, and with candor, for the products of his labor, and he could with equal ease treat in the same manner, and as an equal, with the richest and most powerful lord of a manor, for such products as he had to sell. It was trade that controlled and influenced him and he was among those who finally brought about the real dignity of England as the mistress of the sea, and the overlord of the world's commerce. It was not possible for these brothers to see things from the same standpoint. The difference, finally analysed, came down to this, that in trade to be successful there must be the appreciation of the rights of the other fellow, whereas in feudalism there was only the will and pleasure of the overlord to be considered. Hence it would never have occurred to Edmond Pearsall to have used and appropriated the property of his brother Robert Peshall, whereas the latter, from his perverted point of view was only doing that which he thought was best for England, as well as for Edmond Pearsall, to so direct the inheritance of these lands as to strengthen the feudal system and incidentally advance the social standing of the Peshall family.

It created lots of trouble when England's commerce, both at home and abroad, began to expand during the golden age of Elizabeth's reign, and it went hard with these conservatives to see men of lesser social standing, but of greater wealth, and of more far-reaching influence on land and sea, advanced and preferred at Court. That this caused clear-cut disagreement between the men of feudal rank on the one side and the merchants and adventurers on the other, and that it should come to the point of dividing families, was inevitable. Hence this experience in our family was not an unusual one at this time in the kingdom of England. In the view of one who could only see the greatest good in the continuance of the feudal system, it mattered but little what would be to the best personal interests of Edmond Pearsall, the merchant, as it was far better according to the conservative's judgment that the old social fabric be maintained, even at the expense of one's own brother. It was easy with this exaggerated outlook, for Robert Peshall secretly when he could, and openly when necessary, to bring all the landed estate in his hands belonging to Edmond Pearsall into such concentrated and large holdings as would support a real lordship. But the lordship was to be for Robert the Conservative, and not for Edmond the Merchant. That he succeeded is shown by the following:—

In Chancery proceedings, James I., 1603-1625, (Bundle 21, No. 47) it appears that Robert Peshall in November, 1617, purchased of Sir John Hunt of Cold Newton in the County of Leicester for the consideration of eleven thousand pounds Sterling, the Manors of Colde Newton als Newton Burdett als Marmyon



Manor, in the said county of Leicester, and sundry other lands in Colde Newton als Newton Burdett als Newton Marmyon als Newton near Lowsby in said county. The premises to be free and clear of all incumbrances done by the said Sir John Hunt, or by his father John Hunt, or by his grandfather John Hunt, or any of them, or any person claiming under them. The conveyance was made to Richard Daston, Esq. and to John Chetwind, Esq. as trustees for Robert Peshall.

There was some difficulty about clearing the title so Robert Peshall refused to pay the balance of the purchase money and on February 6, 1617, filed a Bill of Complaint in the Court of Chancery asking that the grantor be made to declare what incumbrances were against the estate and to comply with his agreement of sale. In his answer February 14, 1617, Sir John Hunt admitted the allegations set out in the complaint but alleged that owing to the delay in paying the balance of the purchase money he could not discharge all the incumbrances and that statutes were due to Thomas Horstman and Francis Harris (made May 30, 1603) to Thomas Digby, Esq. to William Chamberlain and Richard Knyveton (made about 1613 for the purpose of freeing from incumbrance Fulbeck and Coplow Closes) and the dower of Mary Hunt the mother of Sir Thomas. Richard Daston, Esq. appeared for Robert Peshall and Richard Weston for Sir John Hunt.

The dispute was settled and the title to the property was vested in Robert Peshall subject to all these incumbrances which made the equity cost but a small sum of money of immediate outlay.

As the obligations that were owing by Sir John Hunt, and which were chargeable against this manor, came due from time to time, Robert Peshall sold lands of Edmond Pearsall and thereby obtained the money to discharge the same. Until ultimately the Manor was owned outright free and clear of debt and the same was vested in Robert Peshall. The full consideration money if raised to present day values of money would equal one million dollars, which was a much larger sum than Robert Peshall ever possessed in his own right, either in lands or in ready money. One cannot believe that Robert Peshall could have possibly foreseen the tragic consequences that were to come to Edmond Pearsall through this course of conduct by him, the said Robert Peshall. The most careful search has failed to show that there is a single instance where these brothers held toward each other any but the utmost brotherly love and tender feelings of regard. Nor can one believe that Robert Peshall was moved by any but a sincere desire to advance the social standing of his family until he became imbued with the thought that he was the chosen one to be preferred when this advance in rank came about; he having already done the same for the line of his elder brother Thomas Pershall of Horsley by making his son John Peshall a Baronet.

The death of Robert Peshall was the subject of an Inquisition as follows: Inquisition taken at Leicester, 24 September, 21 James I. (1624), to enquire after the death of Robert Peshall. The jurors say he held a capital messuage called Priory House and the site of the late dissolved Priory of Olvescrofte als Wolvescrofte in co. Leicester, and a water mill there and lands there and in Rathy, Newtowne and Markfelde, co. Leics. and Manors of Newtone als Cold Newton, Burditt Newton, Marmyon als Marmyons Manor; als Newton by Lowsley and lands there, co. Leics. and a capital messuage in Eccleshall, co.

Stafford, called Beonny Hall and lands there and in Croston and Little Suganall, co. Stafford (particulars given of all these lands). By Indenture dated 2 April 12 James I. (1614) he enfeoffed John Peshall, Bart., Edmund Peshall, and others, with the same to the use of himself for life with contingent remainders after his death to Elizabeth Bosseville his daughter, then wife of Sir Robert Bosseville, and now widow, and her issue, to Sir John Peshall, Bart. Said Robert died 12 Dec. 20 James I. at Cold Newton, co. Leicester, without male issue, and Elizabeth Bosseville widow, his daughter and heir is aged 30 years and more.

Undated. The Earl of Essex Lord Lieutenant of Staffordshire to the Council, certified that Robert Peashall is charged with providing a horse and lance in Staffordshire and therefore exempt from a similar charge made on him for Leicestershire. [State Papers, Domestic, James I., vol. 44, No. 39, (No. 119).]

Statement on behalf of Robert Peashall of Blorepipe, Co. Stafford of reasons why he should not have a light horse charged on him for the manor of Colde Newton, co. Leicester. [*Ibid.*, No. 120.]

The will of Robert Peshall reads as follows:—(Extracted from the Principal Registry of the Probate Divorce and Admiralty Division of the High Court of Justice. In the Prerogative Court of Canterbury.) In the Name of God Amen the seaventh day of October in the year of our Lord God 1622 and in the yeares of the raigne of our soveraigne Lord James by the grace of God of England France and Ireland the twentieth and of Scotland the sixe and fiftith. I, Robert Peshall of Blorepipe in the Countie of Stafford Esqr (albeit somewhat diseased) yet of perfect mynd and remembrance (thanks be to God) doe constitute ordaine and make this my last will and testament in manner and forme followinge first I bequeathe my soule to Allmightie God and my body to be buried as it shall seeme good to my executrix. Item my will and mind is that thirty pounds shall be employed and bestowed by my executrix for the good of the poore inhabitants of the towne of Eccleshall in the said countie of Stafford in forme followinge That is to say to be put out yerely to sixe poore artificers or tradesmen in the said towne at the rate of twelve pence for ewie pound (vpon good securitie taken for repayment at ewie yeares end) And I will that all such mony as shalbe received by twelve pence for the pound as afore said shall be yearly vpon the first Sonday in Lent dealte amongst the poor inhabitants of the said towne vizt To such as keepe noe innakes in their houses nor be common beggers nor hedge tearers by the discreon or appointment of the Lord Bushop of this Dioces for the tyme beeing and of my nephewe Sr John Peshall Baronett and his heyres or by such as they shall apoynte therevnto vntill such time as the said thirty powndes may conveniently be bestowed in land or rent to haue continewance for ever wch I desire may so be And if the said thirtie poundes shalbe bestowed in land or rent then I will that the yearly profittes thereof shalbe dealt in forme afore said Item my will & mind is that tenn poundes shalbe employed and bestowed by my executrix for the good of the poore of the parish of Adbaston in the said countie of Stafford in forme followinge that is to say to be put out yearly to twoe poore housholders in the said parishe of Adbaston at the like rate and securitie as aforesaid and the money to be received by twelve pence in the pound to be distributed amongst the poore of the said parishe of Adbaston in forme aforesaid vntill the said tenn poundes may be conveniently bestowed in land or rent to haue contynewance for ever wch I also desire may be and afterwarde the pfittes thereof to be dealte amongst the poore of the said parishe of Adbaston in forme aforesaid Item I will that my executrix wthin one moneth next after my decease deliur to the Maior of the burrough of Stafforde in the said countye for the tyme beinge fortie shillings to be by him distributed to the poore prisoners wch shall remaine in the Como Gaole there on Ashwensday then next followinge Item I giue and bequeathe to my loving neece the Lady Anne Peshall wife of the said Sr John Peshall one hundred poundes in money to make her a juell and I giue to my brother Edmund Peshall one hvndred poundes to be allowed him vpon the paymt of the money wch he oweth mee Item I giue and bequeathe to Sr Robert Bosseville Knight fiftie poundes and to my sister

Constance Gaywood other tenn poundes And to Margarette wife of James Rowley somtymes daughter of Raphe Gragge tenn poundes Item I giue and bequeath to my loving freind William Iremonger fue poundes And to my good freind Mr. Shipton Parson of Ashley three poundes sixe shillings eight pence Alsoe I giue to Dorothy halfe penny wife of Henry Halfe penny for her paines taken in nursing of Charles Bosseville fower poundes and to my sryvante Nicholas Hand five poundes And to my sryvant Abraham Pennyfather tenne poundes And that the said Abraham Pennyfather after the death of Anne Pennyfather his aunte shall haue and enjoy the messuage or tent wherein she now dwelleth in Croxton and the land therevnto belonginge for and duringe his nrall life yelding and payinge therefore yearlye twentie shillings at the two vsual feasts videlt Our Lady day and St. Michael Tharkeangell Item I will that the rente of that house wherein Thoms Yardley of Croxton dwelleth beinge twelve shillings yearlye be from tyme to tyme as it shall growe due paid to Thomas Allott of Croxton aforesaid during his life towards his maintenance Item I giue and bequeath to James Harries three powndes six shillings eight pence And to his daughter Alice Harries fortie shillings And I giue vnto Dorothy Robertes my daughters chambermaide fortie shillings if shee happen to be in srvice wth my said daughter at the time of my death Item whereas by my deede indented of graunte bearing date the tenth day of September in the fowerteenth yeare of the raigne of our said souaigne Lord the Kings Maiestie that nowe is of England I haue giuen graunted bargained sold assigned and confirmed to my trustie and welbelovied freinds and kinsmen Richard Daston of the midle Temple London Esqr and John Chetwine of Graise Inne in the Countie of Midd esq. all and singular my goodes and chattells whatsoever as well reall as psonall of what nature kind or qualitie soeur the same bee And alsoe all and singular my juells plate ready money houshold stuffe counter pointes & hangings of Arras and tapistrie whatsoever and all implemts and houshold stuffe and husbandrie ware whatsoever lying and beinge at Bloorepipe aforesaid or elsewhere and all my estate right title interest claime and demaund whatsoever of in and to the same and ewie or anie part or pcell thereof To haue and to hould vpon such trust and confidence and to such vses purposes intentes and behoofes as in and by the said recited deede are by me elymitted or appointed Nowe my will and desire is and I doe hereby charge the said Richard Daston and John Chetwynd that all the said goodes and chattells and all other premisses in the said recited deede menconed or expressed shall be from tyme to tyme disposed of and employed as the Lady Elizabeth Bosseville wiffe of the said Sr Robert Bosseville shall apoynte and if shee make noe such apointmt then according to the contentes of the said deede And whereas alsoe I haue conveyed the Priory of Vlsrofte in the Countie of Leicester and other lands in the said countie of Leicester and in the said countie of Stafford to Sr John Leveson Knight nowe deceased and to Robert Brome Esqr for the terme of certayne yeares after my decease vpon certaine trust and confidence by me in them reposed by the conveyance thereof I doe by this my will declare and my mind and

will is alsoe that the same and the proffittes thereof shalbe disposed of and their estate therein shalbe assigned ou as the said Lady Elizabeth Bosseville shall appointe and if shee make noe such appointme then the same shall enure and goe and be enjoyed and imployed accordinge to the true entente and meaninge and according to the lymittacons in the said conveyance thereof Item I will that the Lord Bushopp of Coventry and Lychfeild for the tyme beinge after my death shall haue three of my best beasts instead of three herriottes or composition for soe many videlt one for an house somtyme Steedmans scituate in Eccleshall in a streete there called Cheriffes Rowe one other for the house late in the tenure of James Walker deceased in Croxton aforesaid and one other for the house in Bushopps Offley nowe in the houldinge of one Thomas Wise (anie conveyance or assurance by mee formerly made not withstandinge) yet neitheles yf the said Lord Bushopp for the tyme beinge or anie for him doe demanda anie more or more heriottes by or after my death then the said three heriottes (wch three heriottes are all thatcould be dewely demanded yf noe conveyance weare by mee made as I take it) Then I will that the said Lord Bushopp as to the said three heriottes shall take noe benefitt by this my will and that my executrix and

those to whome my landes are conveyed shall be at libertie toe pleade or shewe anie conveyance by me formerly made in defence or discharge thereof Item my will is that all such leases as I haue heretofore made to any person or persons shall be eniued and shall stand and remaine good to the lessees and purport of their leases Alsoe I doe constitute ordayne and make the said Lady Elizabeth Bosseville my sole and only Executrix of this my last will and Testament And I giue and bequeathe to my said kinsman John Chetwine twentye pounds for his counsell and assistance to be used to and for my said executrix in the execucon of this my will And all the rest of my goodes chattells household stuffe money plate debtes jewells and implements of household (my debts and legacies beinge paid) and my funeral discharged I give and bequeath to my said executrix. IN WITNESS whereof I the said Robert Peshall revoking all former wills have to this my last will and testament subscribed my name and put my seale the daye and yeare first aboue written—Robert Peshall—Sealed subscribed and published in the presence of John Chetwine—Richard Harvey—Thoms Thurstans—Francis Rowley. Proves 16th January 1622, (Old Style). Fos. 19 OB. Heb. 4. Swann.

It was after the death of Robert Peshall that his daughter Elizabeth, the widow of Robert Bosville, married Sir Humphrey Styles. Therefore nothing can be said in mitigation of his connection with this unhappy affair, as he married a law suit with his eyes open as to the true condition of the matter. This large estate enabled him to cut a wide swath in the fashionable society of his day and to be made cup bearer to King Charles I. As was to be expected he made a strong effort to hold on to this property so that he could continue to bask in the sunshine of royalty. He could well afford to address his wife as your truly loving husband, which makes one wonder how much of this love was represented by the landed estate really belonging to Edmond Pearsall, and which he was enjoying as part of the dowry of his wife, the daughter of Robert Peshall, as aforesaid.

It has been well said that the mills of the gods grind slowly but surely, so that we are prepared for the disaster which overtook this Sir Humphrey Styles when his king was beheaded and the estates of Sir Humphrey Styles were forfeited because he was a royalist. The days of small income which followed were made all the more difficult by reason of the plenty which they had enjoyed out of Edmond Pearsall's lands.

## SECTION 5.

JAMES PERSHALL, married ———. Children:—

1. Margaret Pershall, married Sir Edward Wyndsor.
2. Jonas Pershall.

By reference to Chapter 26, Section 2, it will be seen that in a conveyance fixing the entail of his land, Thomas Peshall names Jonas as son of his brother James, and this was confirmed by the Inquisition Post Mortem on the estate of this Thomas Peshall.

The Visitation of Kent, 1619-21 also names him as son of James and adds that he was *Sup'stes in partibus transmarinus*, which translates that he was now surviving in parts across the sea, meaning that he was on the continent of Europe. Before this time the family had established a branch house at Middleburg for the purpose of handling their large tobacco trade. This city at this time was really an English town in the country of Holland. Here the English European merchants had been forced to congregate owing to the quarrels of England with the principal kingdoms of the mainland.



PARISH OF ST BRIDES LONDON:  
REGISTER OF BURIALS MARCH 1629:

Edmund Peshall Gent: a prisoner in the Fleet 27

*Facsimile of entry in Register - Robert Peshall, del.  
18 Feb. 1921.*

BURIAL RECORD OF EDMUND PESHALL

The influence of these men upon their relatives and business associates at home must have been very great. But, in point of numbers, even they are overshadowed by the multitude of English soldiers who swarmed through the Netherlands for more than fifty years before the meeting of the Long Parliament. Then there were the vast fleets of merchantmen manned by English soldiers who had their homeport in the harbors of the Netherlands. These men never gave up their allegiance to the English king. [The Puritan in Holland, England and America, by Douglas Campbell, page 373-375, vol. 2.]

That this branch of the family settled in Holland is confirmed by the following records:—June 13, 1624, Elizabeth Passell, 11 years, had License to pass beyond the sea to Middleburg to her abode. [Genealogic and Heraldic, vol. 25, page 101.]

We must here note a very curious story in Hasted's History of Kent, vol. III., page 213. It is said that George Sayer, son of Sir John Sayer of Bouchiers Hall, Knt. married Frances only daughter of Sir Philip Honynwood and resided at Petts in Charring in Kent. He was the son of Sir John Sayer by his wife Katherine Van Hesse Van Piershall of Zeeland in Holland.

George Sayer was Vice Chamberlain to Queen Catherine and to Queen Mary (wife of William III.). He died in 1718, aged 68.

The will of John Steele, Merchant of London, dated August 16, 1638, proved December 21, 1638, abstracts as follows:—Testator lately arrived from Virginia with the good ship Anna and Sara. He names the poor of the English Church of Middleburg, Holland; Mary Gos, Hester Desmaker, Mary Tielross and John Steele. Residuary legatee Amye Chatfield, his beloved wife. Whereas he hath store of tobacco to sell that belengineth to Mr. John Haas, Merchant in London, and others, same shall be sold by John Desmecker and reckon to the owners. Executrix his wife and heir. Adam Borcel (Pearsall) and James Gage appeared before Adrian Pulinge, Notarius Publicus at Middleburg, Holland, as witnesses, who together with said testator and me, said notarius publicus, have signed and subscribed. Probate as aforesaid to Anne Steele at London. We did not extend our searches into Holland except to develop that the public and church records of Middleburg would not yield any special and definite information as to this branch of the family. The writer has talked with members of the family of Pessel now living in America who came from Holland and who he believes are descendants of this branch of our family, but no positive connection could be established.

## SECTION 6.

Edmund Pearsall als Peshall, the younger, son of Edmond Pearsall, citizen of London and Grocer, Chapter 26, Section 1; born circa 1570; died March 26, 1629, in Fleet Prison, in the City of London, and was buried in the church of St. Bride which was destroyed by the fire of London 1666, and was rebuilt from the designs of Sir Christopher Wren. The Registers were saved fortunately as well as the silver gilt plate which is very interesting, but not pre-reformation, dating from Hen. VIII. up to 1670. The Rev. Arthur Taylor, Vicar, thinks Edmund Peshall would probably have been buried in the Crypt of the old church.

Edmund Peshall married Mary Bathurst daughter of Randolph Bathurst, Alderman of London of ye House of Cinchcocks in Kent and his wife Katherine the daughter of Randolph Argall Esq. [Misc. Genea. et Heraldica, page 288. Thoresly History of Leeds, page 16.] Children:—

1. Robert Peshall, (aged 20 or more in 1619), born 1599; died before 1629.

Hotten's list of Persons of Quality 1600-1700:—Peshall, Robert of Kent, anno 1615, son and heir of Edmund of Bromley, Esq.

The records of Lincolns Inn disclose:—Admitted Nov. 17, 1618-19, Robert Peshall, son and heir apparent of Edmund Peshall of Bromley, Kent, armiger.

2. Edmund Peshall, of Over, Cheshire (aged 18 and more in 1619); born 1601; (age 63 in 1663); died 1676. See Z, this Section.

3. Thomas Peshall, (age 15 and more in 1619); born 1604; died after 1647 and before 1676, unmarried. Hotten's list of Persons of Quality 1600-1700 gives Thomas Peshall, son of Edmund of Bromley, age 17, 1622.

4. Mary Peshall (aged 8 and more in 1619); born 1611; married — Lee. Child, Mary Lee, who married Mathew Morton, gentleman.

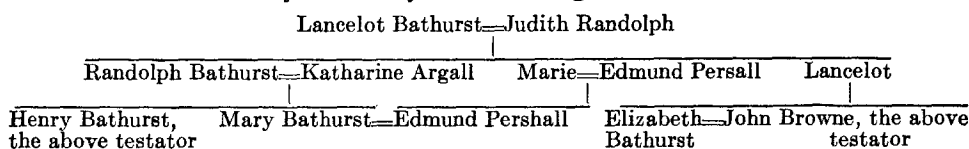
Edmond was born Pearsall which name he used until after he left college, as is shown by Foster's Inns of Court Register which (vol. 2, page 61) calls him Edmond, Edward, or Edmund Pearsall. When he became possessed of his father's land holdings in Kent, and had prospects of being made a baronet, he changed his name to Peshall, the same as his uncle Robert of Bloor Pipe, and his first cousin Sir John Peshall of Horsley.

The will of John Browne of Horton Kirby, Kent, who died February 8, 1595, in the twenty-eighth year of his age, having been but three months married to Elizabeth daughter of Lancelot Bathurst junior, provides as follows: I give and bequeath unto my father-in-law Mr. Launcelot Batherste, my uncle Charles Browne, gent., my cosen Mess Burrell, Mr. Edmond Peershall and my brother-in-law Randal Batherste to either of them forty shillings to be made in rings of gold of that value to be bestowed upon them and to my sisters-in-lawe and brother-in-law Mary, Susan and Raufe Batherste to either of them twenty shillings to be made into rings of gold of that value and to be delivered unto them within twelve months next after my decease.

The will of Henry Bathurst of Horton Kirby, County Kent, dated March 1, 1619/20, names Katherine, wife of his brother Randolph Bathurst, of Horton Kirby, Esq. and their daughters Judith and Anne; testators brothers Launcelot and George Bathurst; Sister Mary Peshall; Uncle Paul Bathurst, Uncle Timothy Bathurst and his children Samuel, Timothy, James, John, Martha and Sara Bathurst; uncle Robert Bathurst; Martha now wife of Thomas Browne of Horton Kirby, Esq. and his daughters Martha and Margaret Browne; John Deane servant to his brother Edward Bathurst; Cousins Thomas Venables, George Sherwood, Thomas Small and Philip Wilton of Farmingham, County Kent; Henry Stable servant to Mr. Thomas Brown; My Godson Thomas Bathurst, son of my brother Edward Bathurst, also brother Edward's wife; Executor Randolph Bathurst of Horton Kirby and St. Mary's London Esq.; Overseers his brothers Launcelot and Edward Bathurst, his friend Mr Thomas Brown, of Horton Kirby, Gent., and his brother George Bathurst; Witnesses Johanner Swarland

John Browne, Edward Bathurst and Henry Stable. Proved March 13, 1619/20 in the Prerogative Court of Canterbury. [Soanne, folio 29.]

This marriage of first cousins and their relationship to the above named testators is more clearly shown by the following chart:—



The following is a transcript of the Inquisition taken eight years after the death of Edmund Peshall:—Inquisition taken at Bortwick, co. Chester, 6 April, 13 Charles I. (1637) after the death of Edmund Peshall, gent., deceased. The jurors say the said Edmund held the Manor of Over, co. Chester, and lands and tenements there. Said Edmund died in London March 26, 4 Charles I. (1629) and Edmund Peshall, gent., is his son and heir and was aged 22 years at the time of his father's death.

This record discloses that Robert the elder brother of Edmund Peshall, 3rd, was dead and left no male heirs of his body begotten, or, being the oldest, he or his descendants would have been the heir male.

It may at first appear strange that no inquisition was taken of the lands held by Edmond Peshall in the county of Cheshire until so long after his decease in 1629. This delay was caused by the litigation he had begun concerning the manors of Over and Whitgate situate in this county and which was not settled until long after his death by the vesting in his heir of the manor of Over. The other manor being acquired by the other parties to this long continued litigation. The Bill of Complaint was filed by Edmond Peshall about 1626 in the Court of Chancery [Chancery Proceedings, Charles I., 1625-1649, Bundle 67, No. 12] in which he made Edmond Randolph esquire, Robert Ffillmer, John Warrington and Charles Bostocke defendants. It appears that Edmond Peshall, Edmond Randolph and Charles Bostocke bought these manors and other lands in the county of Chester intending to hold in equal third parts. Edmond Randolph was the attorney for the partnership and made the conveyance to himself individually, instead of to himself and his two associates. Subsequently Edmond Randolph sold parts of these lands and purchased other parcels, particularly from Sir Thomas Holcraft to whom they loaned one thousand pounds sterling which he repaid by conveying to Edmond Randolph a farm in Cheshire, subject to the life estate of the widow Eaton, which life estate was purchased by the said associates for the sum of five hundred pounds. Edmond Randolph sold part of these lands to the said Robert Ffillmer and John Warrington thereby receiving the sum of five thousand pounds sterling which the bill alleged he refused to account for. These transactions extended from 1620-1624. After this Edmond Randolph sold to one Littler a part of the premises for the sum of twelve hundred pounds sterling, the purchaser paying seven hundred pounds at the time, but defaulting on the balance, the lands were forfeited to Randolph. Another part was traded by him to Joshua Warbton for wool which was paid. Edmond Peshall contended that the entire purchase money involved in the acquisition of



these lands was his personal funds, and that his associates were indebted to him for their thirds, and that Edmond Randolph should account for the moneys received by the sales of parts of these land-holdings, and that conveyances should be made of the unsold lands according to the original intention of the parties.

In the Public Record Office, Chancery Lane, London [Depositions—dated 1 Sepr. 4 Chas. I (1629.) Bundle 20. No. 16. Peschall v Randolph.] appear the following Interrogatories to be ministered to Witnesses to be produced on the part and behalf of Edmund Peshall the Complaint. against Edmund Randolph Esqr. and Charles Bostocke and others defendants—In primis—Doe you know the parties herein? Item—Doe you know the Manner or Lordshipp of Over and Whitgate in the Countie of Chester? Item—Whither did Sir Thomas Holcrofte or others on his behalfe and as feoffee in trust for him make saile of the said Manner with the appurtenances &c? signed by Tho: Cholmondeley. Tho: Portington.

It was the intention of Edmond Pearsall the elder, and his brother Robert Peshall of Bloor Pipe, to create two Baronets in the family of Edmond Pearsall the elder by vesting certain lands, the title to which was in Robert Peshall, in Robert Pearsall the eldest son of Edmond Pearsall the elder. While the landed estates in the possession of Edmond Pearsall the elder were to be used for a like purpose with reference to his second son Edmond Peshall the younger. It was in this manner, after the lands were vested in him, that Edmond Peshall became involved in the never ending litigation with the Calthorp heirs as is shown by the following Chancery record:—

Charles I. 1625-1649. Chancery Proceedings. Bundle 85. No. 32. Persall v Halke. The Replication of Edward Persall, Complaynante to the Answeres of Thomas Halke, Johanne Calthrope, & William Higgs Defendants bothe to the fyrst and second answeres of the said Defendts. The said Complaynante savinge to himself the advantages of exception to the uncertainty and insufficiency of all and every the Answeres of the said Defendants who are very unwilling to have the trewth appear but plott, combyne, and practize as by there Answeres appeareth uninstelye and indirectly to charge this Complaynant & the lande & tenements which are to come unto this Complaynant after the decease of the saide Joane Calthrope with a recognizance or meeting obligatorie of the nature of a Statute Staple of Three Hundred pounds, knowledged by Clement Calthrope the late sonne of the said Joane Calthrope unto Thomas Halke one of the Defendants for the payment of one hundred & fifty five poundes which longe sythence ought to have bene paied and satisfied unto the saide Thomas Halke etc.

In all the investigations into the history of this generation it has always been puzzling that the members of family, for some reason or other, were all gathered in The Fleet Prison on March 26, 1629, the day that Edmond Pearsall the elder made his will, while at the same time, somewhere in London, Edmond Peshall the younger was sick unto death. It cleared this difficulty when the records of burials in St. Brides Church disclosed that Edmond Peshall the younger died in this same Fleet Prison on this same twenty-sixth day of March, 1629, where he was incarcerated as a prisoner committed by the Court of Star Chamber, for which purpose this prison was specially used by that hated tribunal. [Walter Thornbury, *Old and New London*, page 405.] It also disclosed how desperately

Sir Humphrey Styles was trying to hold on to the estates which were the subject of the law-suit which he married when he took for his wife Elizabeth the daughter of Robert Peshall of Bloor Pipe, in Staffordshire. The Court of Star Chamber was now at the height of its dastardly career and it was quite easy for a courtier, so near to the king, to secure the cooperation of the tribunal of Star Chamber to get rid of those who were in any way interfering with the gaieties of the court. And what greater offense could there be than to try to deprive the king's cup-bearer of the princely fortune with which he added so greatly to the pleasures of the society of the court of his day. All that it needed was a confession by Edmond Peshall, the younger, as to wrong-doing and this was easily obtained, for regardless of the rule that confessions must be free, voluntary and unconstrained, pressure of every kind, including torture, was used to procure acknowledgements of guilt. Admissions of the most immaterial facts were construed into confessions, for which the unfortunate prisoner was lucky if no greater penalty was inflicted than imprisonment in the Fleet. It is impossible to conjecture what could possibly have been the particular offence of Edmond Peshall with which he was charged before the Court of Star Chamber; it is sufficient that he was sentenced to this gaol and died while serving his sentence. The friends of Sir Humphrey Styles may have, for instance, secured the cooperation of Arch-Bishop Laud who was at this time beginning by means of the Court of Star Chamber to convert his adversaries to his religious views. [Hallam, Constitutional History of England, vol. 4, page 268.]

\*Z. EDMUND PESHALL of Over, co. Chester, died unmarried 1676. The abstract of his will reads: Will dated seven & twentieth day of May 1676, abstracts as follows:—I, Edmund Pershall of Over in the County of Chester Esquire &c. wishes to be buried under the pew where he usually set in Over Church. He in conjunction with his brother Thomas Pershall (now deceased) by conveyance in law of all his lands in Over and in Whitegate in the County of Chester to his own use and after his death to Mathew Morton gentleman and his wife my niece Mary Lee and to their son or sons in succession and in default their daughter or daughters, and for want of such issue then to Hannah the wife of John Stych of Cannock then in default to John Pershall sonne of Thomas Pershall Esq. which said Thomas is son of Sir John Pershall of Horsley in the County of Stafford. [Probate Registry at Chester, England.] He appoints as Executors his friends Thomas Cholmondeley, Henry Legh and Ralph Loundes gentlemen. He gives to Anne Leadbeater wife of Henry Leadbeater money and to Charles, James and Hannah Leadbeater their children money. By notice to the Probate the Executors each and severally renounce the trust.

Thomas and Edmond Pershall, brothers, born co. Chester, compound for delinquency. Deserted their habitations and adhered to the forces raised against Parliament. Rendered in April 1646. Have taken rational Covenant and negative oath. 27 May 1647. Thomas fined  $\frac{1}{6}$ , Edmund fined  $\frac{1}{2}$ , Total fine £300. February 3, 1649, both fines settled at  $\frac{1}{6}$  £239 10s. Letter by Committee for Compounding. Thomas and Edmund Pershall of Over, Chester, are mentioned in a weekly paper published in 1649. [Probate Registry at Chester, England. State Papers, Domestic, G. 212: 465.]